



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

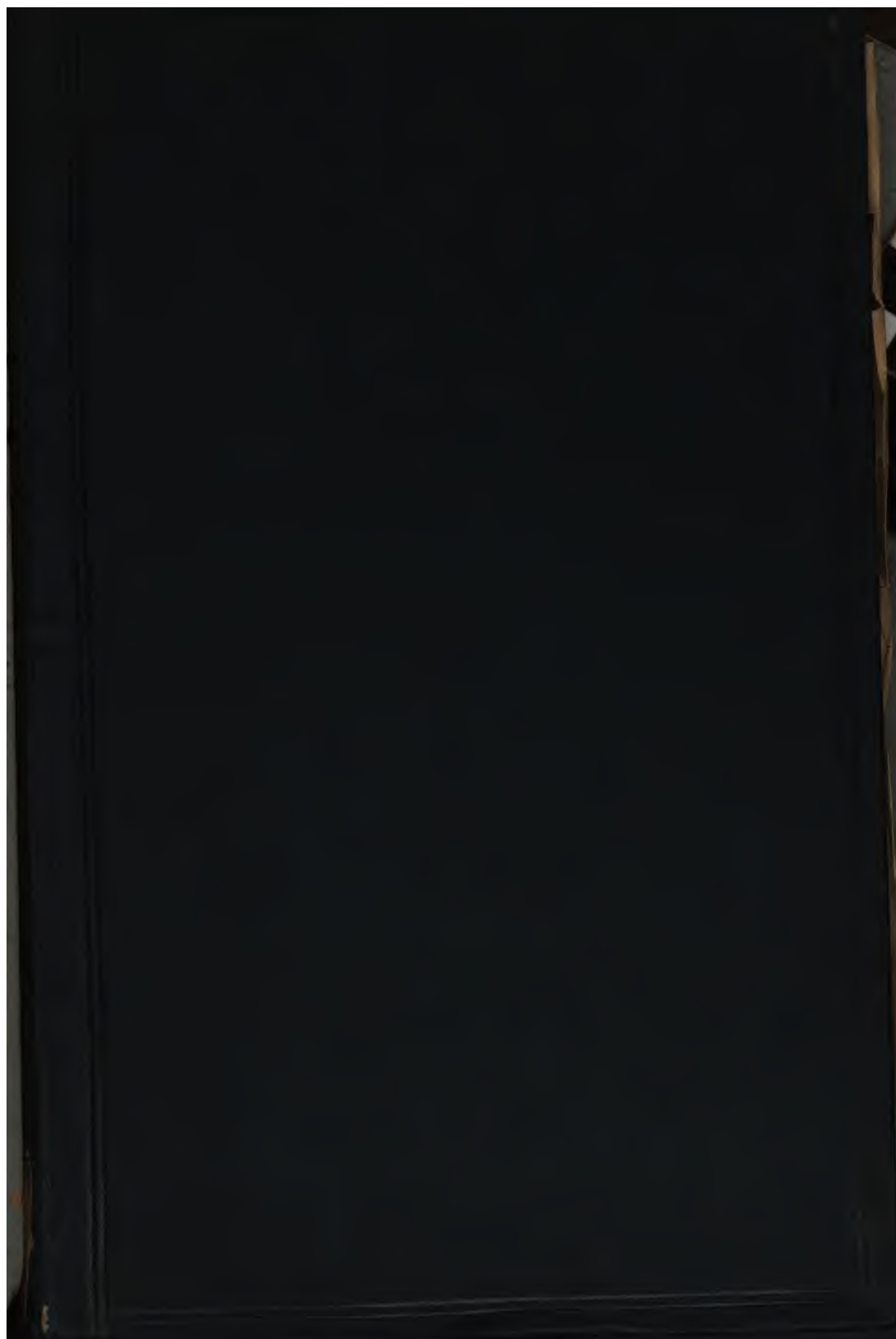
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

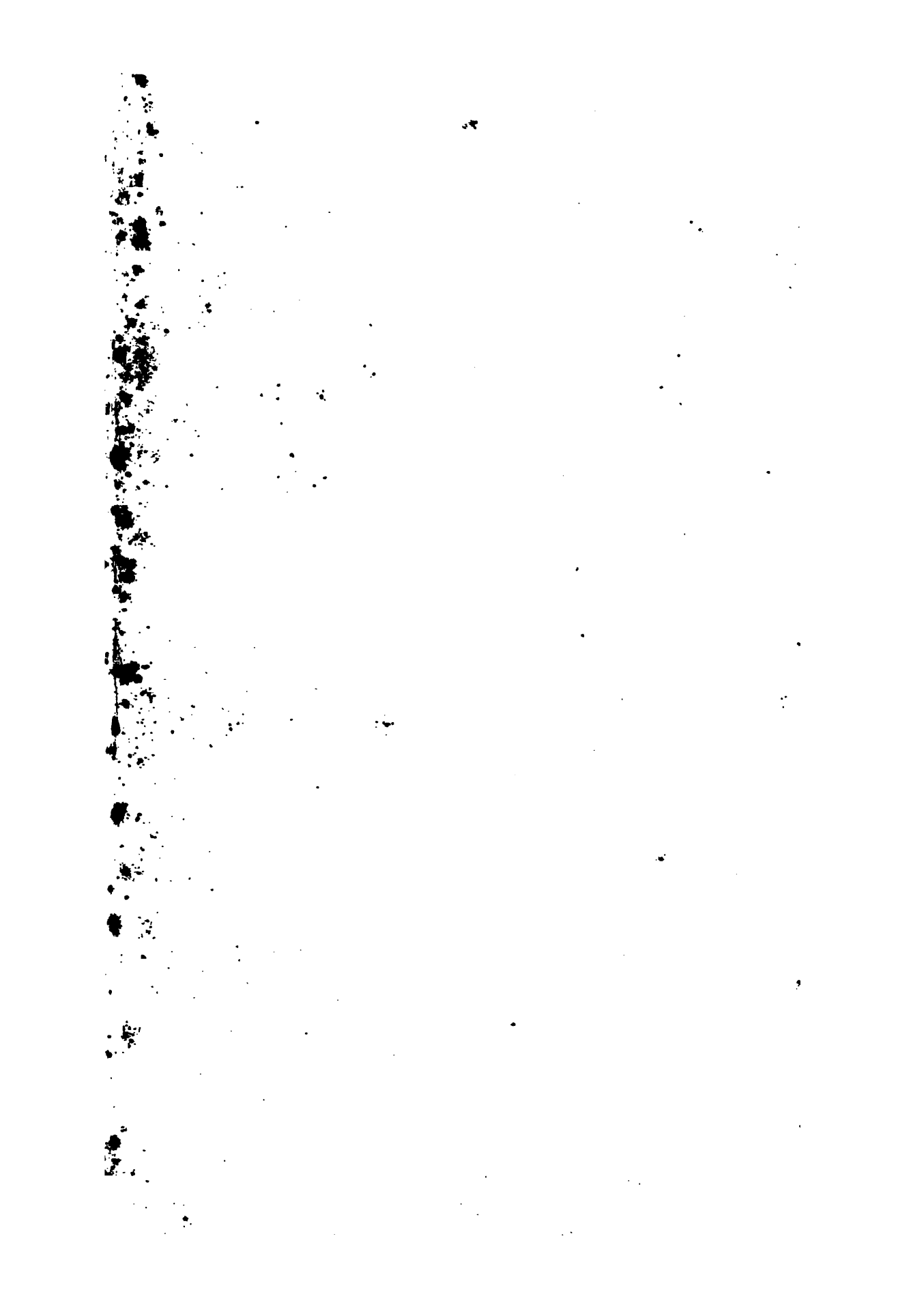
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





600075567-







THE
ARMED STRENGTH OF BELGIUM.

COMPILED IN THE INTELLIGENCE BRANCH OF THE
QUARTERMASTER-GENERAL'S DEPARTMENT,
WAR OFFICE.

1882.

WITH TWO MAPS.
GENERAL MAP OF BELGIUM; ANTWERP AND ENVIRONS.



LONDON:

Printed under the Superintendence of Her Majesty's Stationery Office,

AND SOLD BY

W. CLOWES & SONS, Limited, 14, Charing Cross; HARRISON & SONS, 59, Pall Mall;

W. H. ALLEN & Co., 13, Waterloo Place; W. MITCHELL, 39, Charing Cross;

LONGMAN & Co., Paternoster Row; TRÜBNER & Co., 57 & 59, Ludgate Hill;
STANFORD, Charing Cross; and KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH & Co., 1, Paternoster Square;

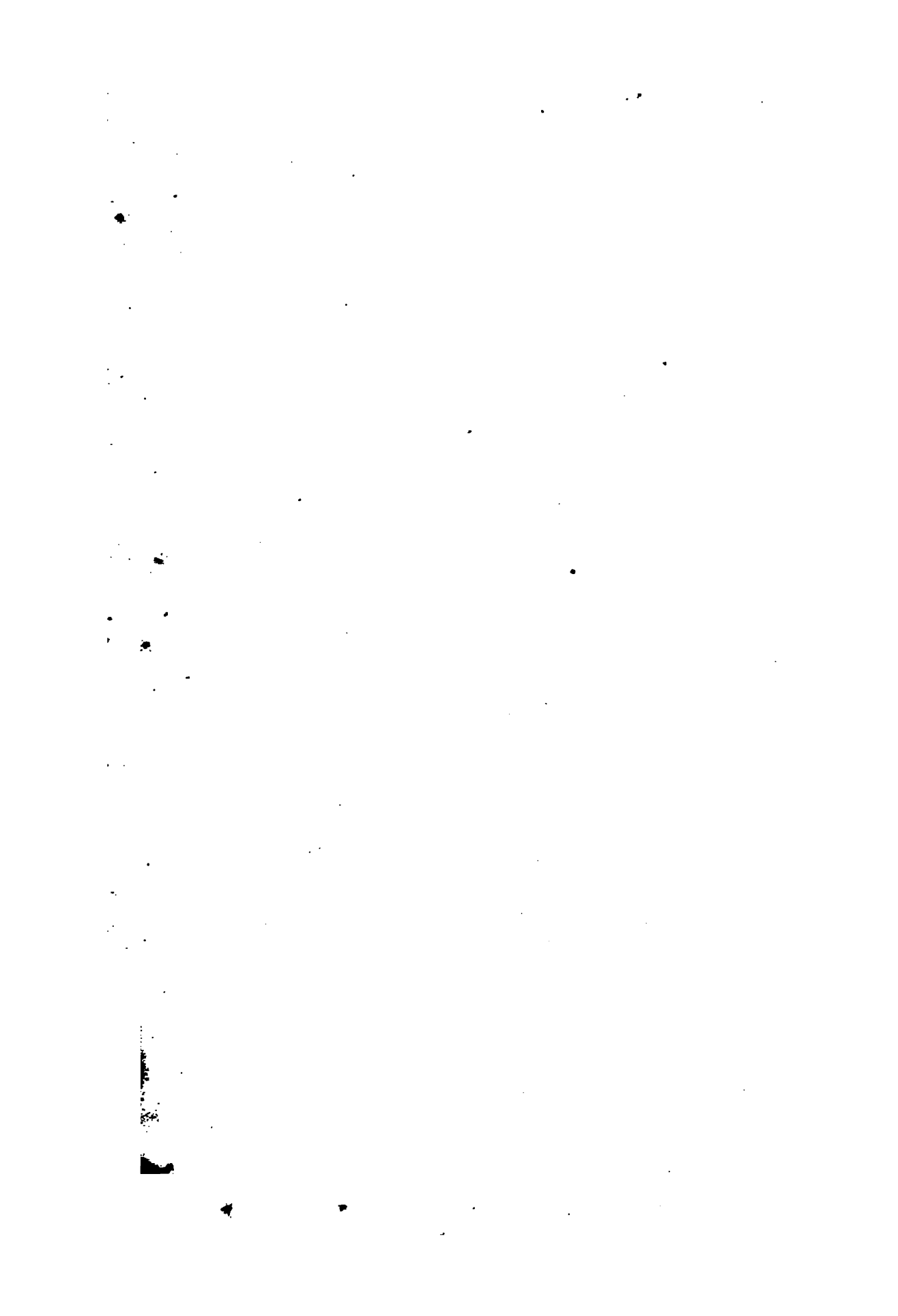
Also by GRIFFIN & Co., The Hard, Portsea;

A. & C. BLACK, Edinburgh;

ALEX. THOM, Abbey Street, and E. PONSONBY, Grafton Street, Dublin.

1882.

Price Two Shillings.



346 e 171 :

THE
ARMED STRENGTH OF BELGIUM.

COMPILED IN THE INTELLIGENCE BRANCH OF THE
QUARTERMASTER-GENERAL'S DEPARTMENT,
WAR OFFICE.

1882.

WITH TWO MAPS.
GENERAL MAP OF BELGIUM; ANTWERP AND ENVIRONS.



LONDON:

Printed under the Superintendence of Her Majesty's Stationery Office,
AND SOLD BY

W. CLOWES & SONS, Limited, 14, Charing Cross; HARRISON & SONS, 59, Pall Mall;
W. H. ALLEN & Co., 13, Waterloo Place; W. MITCHELL, 39, Charing Cross;
LONGMAN & Co., Paternoster Row; TRÜBNER & Co., 57 & 59, Ludgate Hill;
STANFORD, Charing Cross; and KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH & Co., 1, Paternoster Square;
Also by GRIFFIN & Co., The Hard, Portsea;

A. & C. BLACK, Edinburgh;

ALEX. THOM, Abbey Street, and E. PONSONBY, Grafton Street, Dublin.

1882.

Price Two Shillings.

346 e 747.

(Wt. 2692 300 5 | 82 H & S 2716)

SOURCES OF INFORMATION

Journal Militaire Officiel (Bruxelles).
Revue Militaire Belge.
La Belgique Militaire.
Revue Militaire de l'Etranger (France).
Bulletin de la Réunion des Officiers (France).
Annuaire Statistique de la Belgique.
Aide-mémoire de l'Officier d'Infanterie.
Règlement sur l'Exercice et les Manœuvres.
Statesman's Year-book.
Encyclopædia Britannica.
Statistique Générale de la Belgique (Exposé de la Situation du Royaume).
Dictionnaire des Lois, Arrêtés, Instructions, et Circulaires, &c.
Aide-mémoire des Officiers d'Artillerie (France).
L'Indépendance Belge.
L'Organisation Militaire de la Belgique. Ch. de Savoye.
Organisation of Belgian Army and Defence of Territory. Plantenga.
Budget des Voies et Moyens pour l'Exercice. 1881.
Les Forces Nationales. Lieut.-General v. d. Smissen.
Le Pays et l'Armée. General Goethals.
Notes sur le Service des Etats-majors. Bn. Lahure.
La Belgique, Physique, Politique, et Industrielle. L. Genon-
ceaux.
Contemporary Review (August, 1880).
Journal of Royal United Service Institution.
Situation Militaire de la Belgique. Travaux de défense de la
Meuse. Brialmont.

CONTENTS.

[In Chapters III to VIII the aim has been to give a fairly complete account of the Belgian Army from Recruitment to Mobilisation: the remaining Chapters are devoted exclusively to details.]

Chapter.	Page
I. INTRODUCTION.	
Part 1st. Boundaries, Communications, Statistics, &c. ..	7
Part 2nd. History, Government, and Constitution ..	11
II. WAR MINISTRY.	
MILITARY LAWS AND DECREES ..	17
III. RECRUITMENT.	
General Rules ..	18
I. Miliciens ..	20
II. Bounty Volunteers (<i>Volontaires avec Prime</i>) ..	29
III. Substitutes (<i>Remplaçants</i>) ..	33
IV. Volunteers pure (<i>Volontaires purs</i>) ..	34
Selection of Men for the various Arms, and Concluding Remarks..	36
IV. COMPOSITION OF ACTIVE ARMY (COMBATANTS).	
Origin of Combatant Branches ..	39
Infantry ..	43
Cavalry ..	44
Artillery and Matériel ..	44
Train ..	50
Ammunition and Field Parks ..	51
Engineers ..	55
V. COMPOSITION OF ACTIVE ARMY (NON-COMBATANTS).	
Intendance and Administration Battalion : Rations : forage, &c.	56
Medical Services ..	61
Gendarmerie ..	64
VI. CIVIC GUARD ..	65
VII. PEACE ORGANISATION AND DISTRIBUTION OF ARMY ..	71
VIII. MOBILISATION, WAR STRENGTH, AND DEFENCE OF BELGIUM.	
I. Mobilisation, War Strength and Organisation of Army ..	77
II. Scheme of Defence of Belgium and Description of Fortresses ..	86
IX. MILITARY EXPENDITURE.	
Pay and Allowances ..	97

Chapter.	Page
X. CLOTHING, EQUIPMENT, SMALL ARMS, SMALL-ARM AMMUNITION ..	107
XI. DRILL, BARRACKS, MESSING, BEDDING	119
XII. COUNCIL OF MILITARY EDUCATION AND EDUCATIONAL ESTABLISH- MENTS	123
XIII. OFFICERS AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.. .. .	144
Army Rank, Appointment, Promotion, &c.	149
Ranks and Precedence of Corps	152
XIV. MILITARY JUSTICE AND DISCIPLINE	152
XV. REMOUNTS.. .. .	162
XVI. MUSKETRY.. .. .	162
XVII. WAR MINISTRY—1st DIRECTION AND MILITARY CARTOGRAPHICAL INSTITUTE	165
<hr/>	
APPENDIX I. Peace Establishments	168
„ II. Tables of Pay and Office Allowances	176
„ III. States of Educational Establishments.. .. .	190
„ IV. Port of Antwerp	194
INDEX	198

THE ARMED STRENGTH OF BELGIUM.

CHAPTER I.

Introduction—Boundaries—Communications—Statistics—History
—Government and Constitution.

INTRODUCTION.

PART I.—BOUNDARIES, COMMUNICATIONS, STATISTICS, &c.

THE frontiers of Belgium are 789 miles in length, of which 268 ^{Frontiers.} miles border Holland, 60 miles Germany, 80 miles the Duchy of Luxembourg, and 381 miles France. The coast line on the North Sea measures 42 miles.

The coasts are throughout low and sandy, presenting large areas covered with sandy elevations called *dunes*, varying from one to five miles in breadth, and sometimes attaining an elevation of 20 or even 30 feet. *Polders*, or alluvial districts which have been reclaimed in part from the surrounding marshes, are numerous along the coast and on the banks of the Scheldt.

The only port on the coast is Ostende, the harbour of ^{Seaports.*} which is narrow and of slight depth. Nieuport and Blankenburgh are fit only for fishing smacks. Antwerp, the great port of Belgium, the centre of commerce as well as defence of the country, is on the right bank of the Scheldt, 50 to 60 miles from the mouth of the river, both banks for four-fifths of the distance being Dutch.

The principal rivers are the Scheldt, Meuse, and Yzer.

The *Scheldt* is navigable during its entire course through ^{Navigable} Belgium, and has a general direction from S.W. to N.E., passing ^{rivers.} through the province of Hainault, along the eastern boundary of West Flanders, traversing East Flanders, and finally forming the boundary between the provinces of East Flanders and Antwerp. It then divides into two branches, the East and West Scheldt, which enclose the islands composing the Dutch province of Zeeland. Its entire length through Belgium is 108 miles.

The *Meuse* has a course nearly parallel to that of the Scheldt, traversing the provinces of Namur, Liège, and Limbourg. It is

* For port of Antwerp, *vide* Appendix IV.

Navigable rivers.

115 miles in length, during the whole of which it is navigable by boats of from 100 to 150 tons.

The small river *Yzer*, which enters the sea at Nieuport, is navigable for about 26 miles.

The navigable rivers, connected with the Scheldt are: the Dyle, which after receiving the Nethe at the village of Rumpst, takes the name of Ruppel, and joins the Scheldt nearly opposite to Ruppelsmonde; the Great and Little Nethe, which after their junction take the name of Nethe, and fall into the Dyle; the Demer, also an affluent of the Dyle; the Dender, which enters the Scheldt at Termonde; the Durme, which joins it near Thielrode; and the Lys at Ghent. The entire length of these streams is 230 English miles. The navigable rivers of the Meuse are the Ambleve and the Vesdre, affluents of the Ourthe; the Ourthe, which joins the Meuse at Liège; and the Sambre, which joins it at Namur. The navigable length of these is 142 miles. The small river of Yperlee, which joins the Yzer, is navigable for about nine miles. The other streams are the Senne, the Haine, the Semoy, and the Lesse.

Canals.

Besides the navigable rivers, Belgium has a number of canals for inland navigation, some of which are used also for irrigation. They are twenty-nine in number, and their entire length is 605,440 metres, or 376 English miles. The principal of these canals are:—(1) Bruges to Ostend; (2) Brussels to Charleroi; (3) Bocholt to Herenthal; (4) Brussels to Willebroeck; (5) Ghent to Bruges; (6) Liège to Maestricht; (7) Maestricht to Bois-le-Duc; (8) Pommerael to Antwerp; (9) Plassendaale to Nieuport; (10) the Louvain Canal; (11) the Lieve, and (12) the Moervaert. Each of these canals is upwards of 12 miles in length, and the longest, that from Brussels to Charleroi, upwards of 46 miles. The entire length of the river and canal navigation of Belgium is 1,006 English miles.

Revenue and expenditure.

The public income and expenditure of Belgium in recent years have mostly been balanced, with an occasional surplus. The actual revenue for the year 1878, the last of which accounts were published in 1880, amounted to 264,435,260 francs, or £10,577,408, and the actual expenditure to 272,341,317 francs, or £10,893,652, leaving a deficit of 17,906,057 francs, or £716,240.

The gross revenue and expenditure of Belgium for each of the 10 years 1870 to 1880, actual for the first six, and estimated for the last four years, are shown in the subjoined table:—

Years.	Revenue.	Expenditure.
	£	£
1871	7,124,960	6,774,516
1872	7,556,560	7,336,964
1873	7,368,920	6,957,920
1874	9,185,720	9,456,696
1875	11,148,463	11,688,900
1876	10,909,760	10,790,480

Years.	Revenue.	Expenditure.
	£	£
1877	10,351,657	10,857,700
1878	10,161,820	9,857,700
1879	10,413,354	10,384,270
1880	11,148,463	11,688,900

The provisional estimates of revenue for the year 1881 amounted to 263,720,560 francs, or £10,548,822, and the estimates of expenditure for 1880 to 276,375,086 francs, or £11,055,003, leaving a deficit of 12,654,526 francs, or £506,181. The deficit was to be covered by an increase of taxation.

Belgium has an area of 29,455 square kilometres, or 11,373 English square miles, about one-eighth the area of England, and one-eighteenth that of France. The kingdom is divided into nine provinces, of which the following table shows the area and population at the last decennial census enumeration, taken December 31st, 1876, and the estimated population on December 31st, 1878 :—

Provinces.	Area, English Square Miles.	Population.	
		Dec. 31, 1876.	Dec. 31, 1878.
Antwerp (Anvers)	1,093	538,881	560,020
Brabant	1,268	936,062	978,071
Flanders { West	1,249	684,468	693,530
{ East	1,158	863,458	879,682
Hainault	1,437	956,354	975,252
Liège	1,117	632,228	650,801
Limbourg	931	205,237	209,343
Luxembourg	1,706	204,201	208,134
Namur	1,414	315,796	321,835
Total	11,373	5,336,185	5,476,668

It will be seen that Belgium had, at the end of 1876, a population of 5,336,185 on an area of 11,373 English square miles, or 469 per square mile, being the most densely inhabited country in Europe. In 1878 this population had increased to more than 480 per square mile. Between 1840 and 1878 the population increased by 1,403,777, or 34 per cent.

According to an official report laid before the Chambers in May, 1878, there are 2,256,860 Belgians who speak French; 2,659,890 who speak Flemish; 38,070 German; 340,770 French and Flemish; 22,700 French and German; 1,790 Flemish and German, and 5,490 who speak all three languages. *Flemish* is the dialect spoken in the provinces of Flanders, the north-west of Hainault, in the vicinity of Brussels and Louvain, in the

province of Antwerp, and the greater part of Limbourg. The "Wallon" in the greater portion of Hainault, in the district of Nivelles, in the greater part of Liège, and Luxembourg, and in the province of Namur.

Religion. The Roman Catholic religion is professed by nearly the entire population of Belgium. The Protestants do not amount to 13,000; the Jews number less than 1,500.

Trade and industry. According to the last census returns, one-fourth of the population of Belgium is engaged in agricultural pursuits, and another fourth in trade and manufactures.

The tendency, visible in most European countries, of the people to collect in large towns, is also apparent in Belgium, and is particularly showing itself in the capital, which contained, on the 31st December, 1876, 376,965 inhabitants. Besides Brussels, there were, in 1876, three towns in Belgium with a population of above 40,000 inhabitants, namely, Antwerp, with 150,650; Ghent, with 127,653; Liège, with 115,851, and Bruges, with 45,097 inhabitants.

The international commerce of the kingdom is almost entirely carried on by foreigners, chiefly under the British flag. The commercial marine, which has been on the decline for a number of years, consisted at the end of 1878 of 48 vessels, of an aggregate burthen of 44,980 tons, inclusive of 23 steamers of a total burthen of 29,850 tons. Belgium has no navy.

Coal. One of the most important natural productions of Belgium, and chief basis of its industry, is coal, which is found in three out of the nine provinces of the kingdom, Hainault, Liège, and Namur, about three-fourths of the total annual produce being raised in the first-named province. The coal mines in Belgium extend over 687 acres, employing 108,000 miners, and producing on the average of recent years 14,000,000 tons of coal per annum. About one-fourth of the total coal produce is exported, mainly to France.

Railways. In Belgium the State is a great railway proprietor, and the State railways are one of the largest sources of national revenue. The following statement shows the length of railways, distinguishing State and private lines, open in Belgium at the end of 1880:—

Total of State "Réseau"	..	..	1,655 miles
Lines worked by companies	..	..	1,350 "
Total lines open	..	..	3,005 "

In the year 1878, the total gross receipts of the State railways amounted to 93,000,000 francs, or £3,720,000, and those of the private lines to 38,117,312 francs, or £1,524,692.

The expenditure of the State railways, in the year 1878, was 55,523,391 francs, or £2,220,932, and that of the private lines 22,729,371 francs, or £909,175. The net receipts, per kilomètre,

amounted to 16,314 francs, or £652 on the State railways, and to 8,959 francs, or £358 on the private lines in the year 1878.

* * * * *

The money, weights, and measures of Belgium, and the British equivalents, are as follows :—

Money,
weights, and
measures.

MONEY.

The Franc Average rate of exchange, 25 to £1 sterling.

WEIGHTS AND MEASURES.

The Kilogramme or Livre	.. .. =	2·20 lbs. avoirdupois	
„ Tonneau	.. .. =	2,300 lbs.	
„ Hectolitre	.. { Dry measure .. =	2·75 imperial bushels	
	.. { Liquid measure .. =	22 „ gallons	
„ Mètre	.. .. =	3·28 feet	
„ Mètre Cube..	.. .. =	85·81 cubic feet	
„ Kilomètre	.. .. =	1093 yards	
„ Hectare	.. .. =	2·47 English acres	
„ Square Kilomètre	.. .. =	{ 247·11 „ „ or	
		0·386 square mile.	

PART II.—HISTORY, GOVERNMENT, AND CONSTITUTION.

The following is a brief retrospect of the circumstances under which Belgium became an independent kingdom :—

Origin of the
Kingdom of
Belgium.

The Netherlands (Holland and Belgium) were, after their conquest by the forces of the French Republic, 1794—1795, formed by the conquerors into the Batavian Republic. Napoleon, in 1806, set up a kingdom of Holland, instead of the Batavian Republic, and gave the crown to his brother, Louis Bonaparte. On the abdication of the latter in 1811, the two countries were added to the French Empire.

In 1813, after the battle of Leipzig, the Dutch threw off the yoke of the French, and the Belgian provinces, having been evacuated by Napoleon's armies, fell under the power of the Allied Sovereigns.

At the peace of 1814 the five Great Powers made over the sovereignty of the Belgian provinces to the King of Holland, “with the view of maintaining the balance of power, and by virtue of their right of conquest over Belgium.”

A constitution was granted by the King of Holland, which was never thoroughly acceptable to the Belgians. Between the two countries dissensions speedily sprang up, which were fomented and embittered by the arrogance of the Dutch, and their monopoly of all posts of trust, to the exclusion of the Belgian element. In 1830 a revolution broke out in Belgium, having for its object the separation of the country from Holland. At Brussels the Dutch troops were resisted, and some sharp fighting took place. The Revolutionary party gradually gained head everywhere, and eventually the Dutch were expelled from the whole country, with the exception of Antwerp. An appeal to the Great Powers by the

Origin of the Kingdom of Belgium. King of Holland was answered by a refusal to interfere in his behalf.

On 26th December, 1830, the five Great Powers recognised the permanent separation of Belgium and Holland, and on 11th July, 1831, Prince Leopold of Saxe-Coburg was elected first King of Belgium, the Duc de Nemours, second son of Louis Philippe, having previously refused the crown.

The Dutch still continuing to hold Antwerp, measures of coercion were undertaken by England and France. A French army besieged this fortress, which surrendered 24th December, 1832.

Since that time nothing has occurred to check the commercial prosperity and material progress of Belgium.

Administrative divisions or provinces.

The nine large administrative divisions of the kingdom are called Provinces; they are—

West Flanders,
East Flanders.
Antwerp,
Limbourg,
Brabant,
Liège,
Hainault,
Namur,
Luxembourg.

"Arrondissements administratifs."

The chief town of the province is the seat of provincial authority.

Each province is divided into a varying number of "*arrondissements administratifs*." The Commissioner of the "*arrondissement*" resides in the principal town of the "*arrondissement*."

"Cantons de milice" and "communes."

The "*arrondissement administratif*" is subdivided into "*cantons de milice*." The "*canton de milice*" is made up of various numbers of "*communes*." The kingdom on 31st December, 1879, contained 2,582 "*communes*."

Government.

The form of government is a constitutional monarchy. The sovereignty rests with the nation. The nation only delegates the exercise of authority.

The authority is divided into two categories (i) general authority (*pouvoirs généraux*); (ii) local authority (*pouvoirs locaux*).

The general authority comprises the judicial, legislative, and executive authorities. The local authority* consists of the provincial and communal authorities.

Provincial authority.

The powers that exercise the *provincial* authority are the "*conseil provincial*," the members of which are elected for four years, the "*députation permanente*" consisting of six members, who sit for four years, and the "*gouverneur*," or Government Commissioner.

The independence of the provincial authority is not absolute ;

* The local authorities are described somewhat in detail, as it is through their agency that the conscription for the army is carried out.

its most important acts are placed under the control of the Government.

The "commissaires d'arrondissement" are agents for superintending and transmitting instructions; they are subordinate to the "gouverneur," and the "députation permanente," under whose directions they supervise the administration of the rural "communes," and towns of less population than 5,000 inhabitants, provided these towns are not the chief towns of the "arrondissement."

Commissaires
d'arrondisse-
ment.

The communal authorities are :—

Communal
authority.

The "conseil communal," whose members are elected for six years; the "college échevinal," or college of aldermen; and the "collège des bourgmestres et échevins" (burgomasters and aldermen), charged with the executive power and the daily administration of affairs. There are two aldermen in "communes" with a population under 2,000 inhabitants, and four in those where the population exceeds that number. There are five aldermen at Brussels, and five at Antwerp.

The general administration of the kingdom is divided into six departments or ministries :—

General ad-
ministration
of govern-
ment.

The Ministry for Foreign Affairs.

The Ministry for the Home Department.

The Ministry for Finance.

The Ministry for Justice.

The Ministry for War.

The Ministry for Public Works.

The succession to the throne is in the direct male line of Leopold of Saxe-Coburg, to the perpetual exclusion of females and their descendants. In default of a male heir the King, with the consent of the Legislative Chambers, may nominate his successor, and in further default of such nomination the throne is declared vacant.

Succession to
the throne.

The legislative power is vested in the King and two Chambers, the Senate and Chamber of Representatives. The Chamber has the parliamentary initiative and preliminary vote in all cases relating to the receipts and expenses of the State, and the contingent of the army.

The members of the Chamber of Representatives are elected by citizens paying not less than 20 florins (about 35s.) annually in direct taxes. The number of deputies is 1 for 40,000 inhabitants, or 124. Every representative must be Belgian by birth or naturalisation; he must be in the enjoyment of civil and political rights, 25 years of age, and resident in Belgium. No money or property qualification is required; the members of the House of Representatives are elected for four years, renewable one-half every two years.

Chamber of
Representa-
tives.

The Senate is composed of exactly one-half the number of members in the House of Representatives—one for every 80,000 inhabitants—and the Senators are elected by the same

Senate.

Senate.

citizens who elect that chamber. The Senators are elected for eight years, renewable one-half every four years. To be eligible for the Senate, the candidate must be Belgian by birth or naturalisation, in full possession of all political and civil rights, resident within the kingdom, at least 40 years of age, and must pay by Article 56 of the Constitution at least 1,000 florins (£84) direct taxes. The number eligible was in 1840, 403; in 1879, 495.

Payment of members of Chamber of Representatives.

The members of the Chamber of Representatives not residing in the town where the Chamber sits, are paid for their services at the rate of 430 francs (£17 4s.) monthly, during the continuance of the session. The Senators are unpaid.

The King has power to dissolve the Chambers, either simultaneously or separately.

The Presidents and Vice-Presidents of each Chamber are nominated by its members at the beginning of each session. The Chambers assemble as of right every year, on the second Tuesday in November, unless they shall have been previously called together by the King. The session must last at least 40 days.

At the age of 18, the heir to the throne is a Senator; he cannot take part in the debates till he is 25 years old.

Powers of the King.

The King convokes the Legislative Chambers; sanctions the laws and sees them executed; commands the army; declares war; makes treaties of peace, of alliance, and of commerce; orders the stamping of money; confers orders, and gives titles of nobility; confirms sentences passed by the judges, reduces the sentence or grants pardon; and gives the appointments of general, provincial, and communal administration.

CHAPTER II.**War Ministry—Military Laws and Decrees.****PART I.—WAR MINISTRY.****Powers of Ministers.**

ALL Ministers of the Crown are nominated and dismissed by the King, and must be Belgians by birth or naturalisation. They are the prime agents of the executive; they assume the responsibility for the acts of the King, by the apposition of their signature.

Each Minister directs a department of the general administration.

In the case of temporary absence of a Minister, the King delegates a Minister *ad interim*, to perform the duties.

The central administration of the Ministry of War comprises

the Minister's office (*cabinet du ministre*), the Secretariat, and War Ministry.
six Directions, each under a director, as follows:—

- 1st Direction.—Military operations; Instruction of the Army.
- 2nd Direction.—Personnel of the Army and Recruitment.
- 3rd Direction.—Matériel of Artillery.
- 4th Direction.—Matériel of Engineers.
- 5th Direction.—Military Cartographical Institute.
- 6th Direction.—Administration. The Chief Intendant of the Army is director of the 6th Direction.

The Minister's Cabinet is charged with the execution of business under the Minister's own eye.

The Secretariat is the Central Department.

The personnel of the War Department is composed of officers and sub-officers of the Army, as well as civil functionaries and employés.

The establishment (*cadre*) of the military staff is not yet laid down; the Minister fixes it according to the business in hand. A certain number of officers are temporarily appointed to each direction.

The civil establishment is as follows:—1 sub-director, 2 heads of divisions; 8 heads of sections, 9 sub-heads of sections; 12 employés, 1st class; 18 employés, 2nd class; 6 draughtsmen. Functionaries and employés of the rank of sub-chief of section and upwards are appointed and removed by the King; the other civil employés are appointed and removed by the Minister.

The title of each Direction of the War Ministry indicates the *essential duties* of the Direction; they include everything that concerns the formation and organisation of the Army, its instruction, armament, and mobilisation, the administration of military establishments, the study of means of defence of the country, the construction and maintenance of fortifications, &c.

The division of work in the War Ministry is as follows:—

Duties of Directions.

THE SECRETARIAT.

1st Section.—General Information and Records.

2nd Section.—Forwarding.

1ST DIRECTION. (Military Operations and Instruction.)

1st Section.—Organisation. Movement of Troops.

2nd Section.—Mobilisation.

3rd Section.—Study of Points of Concentration, Military Reconnaissances, &c.

4th Section.—General Instruction of the Army and Educational Establishments.

5th Section.—Historical and Military Geographical work.

6th Section.—Statistics and Organisation of Foreign Armies.*

7th Section.—Library.

* See page 165.

2ND DIRECTION. (Personnel and Recruitment.)

- 1st Section.—Officers.
- 2nd Section.—Sub-officers and Soldiers.
- 3rd Section.—Pensions and Half-pay.
- 4th Section.—The “Milice” (or Conscripts) and Volunteers.
- 5th Section.—Replacement (*remplacement*) and Bounty Volunteers (*volontaires avec prime*).

3RD DIRECTION. (Matériel of Artillery.)

- 1st Section.—Technical Matters, Arsenal, Manufacture of Arms, Ammunition, &c.
- 2nd Section.—Accounts.

4TH DIRECTION. (Matériel of Engineers.)

- 1st Section.—Technical Matters, Fortifications, &c.
- 2nd Section.—Accounts.

5TH DIRECTION.* (Military Cartographical Institute.)

- 1st Section.—Astronomical and Geodesical Calculations. Map Dépôt, &c.
- 2nd Section.—Topographical work on the ground—Drawing, Enlarging, Engraving, Printing, &c.

6TH DIRECTION. (Administration.)

- 1st Section.—Pay and Allowances, &c.
- 2nd Section.—Examination of Accounts.
- 3rd Section.—Clothing, Equipment, Bedding, Remounts.
- 4th Section.—Food and Forage, Fuel and Light, General Transport.
- 5th Section.—Hospitals.
- 6th Section.—General Accounts. Civil personnel of War Ministry.

To the War Department are affiliated—

- (1.) The Council of Military Education (*conseil de perfectionnement d'instruction militaire*).
- (2.) Fund for widows and orphans of officers of the Army.

The principal establishments under the control of the Ministry of War, are:—

- 1. Cannon Foundry at Liège.
- 2. Small Arm Factory at Liège.
- 3. Arsenal (*arsenal de construction*) at Antwerp.
- 4. Pyrotechnical School at Antwerp.
- 5. School of Musketry and Instruction for Infantry at Beverloo.
- 6. Artillery Practice Ground at Brasschaet.
- 7. School of Gunnery at Brasschaet.
- 8. War School at Ixelles.†

* See page 165.

† The Belgian Staff College. The Military School answers to R.M.A. and R.M.C.

9. Military School at Ixelles.
10. Riding School at Ypres.
11. School for Soldiers' Children (*enfants de troupe*).
12. School of Field Works for Infantry.
13. School for Volunteers of Infantry.

PART II. MILITARY LAWS AND DECREES.

According to the Constitution the duty of the Army is to ^{Duty of the} defend the Belgian territory against foreign aggression, and ^{army.} guard the neutrality of the country, upon the maintenance of which depends the guarantee of its independence by the Great Powers. It has further to assist in the preservation of order.

The law fixes the cadres of officers on a peace and war ^{Cadre of} footing. ^{officers.}

The interior organisation of corps is regulated by the King, ^{Army on} as well as the numbers of the component parts of the army on a ^{peace footing.} *peace footing.*

Before 1845 the organisation of the Army was fixed by Royal Orders in Counsel (*arrêtés royaux*). The law of 19th May, 1845, organised a general staff, personal staff, the cadres of officers of the various arms, and the administrative services.

This organisation has been modified by the laws of 8th June, 1853, 15th April, 1868, and 16th August, 1873.

None of these laws laid down *the effective war strength of the* ^{War strength} *army of which the contingent is annually voted by the Chambers.* ^{of army.} The law fixing the strength of the war contingent, is only valid for one year (Art. 119 of the Constitution).

This contingent, which from 1856 had been fixed at 80,000 men, was in 1873 raised to 100,000, at which figure it has since remained.

The explanatory circular attached to the Bill, fixing the contingent of 1879, shows that since 1833 the Belgian Army has never reached the effective strength required by its organisation.

It was felt to be absolutely necessary to fill up the gaps resulting from casualties of all kinds (absentees, young men put back, deserters, men morally unfit, men degraded from military rank, &c.). To remedy this evil, in 1866 it was decreed that the annual levy should be raised from 10,000 to 12,000; but this increase of the contingent provided only a partial remedy, for the dispensations and the exemptions of which the number was very great, reduced the army in a way contrary to the intention of the legislature. Consequently, General Renard in his Bill, fixing the contingent for 1879, required that the number of 12,000 men should be really placed at the disposal of Government. It was thought that this would open up the way to the formation of a recruiting reserve; but up to the present year (1882) there is nothing of the kind in existence,

War strength of the army. and the Chambers had in December 1880, to pass a law which provides by an increment* to the annual levy (on account of casualties) for there being by 1888 *eight classes* of an average strength of 12,000 each, or a total of 96,000 for mobilisation.

It remains to be seen whether this will enable the army to mobilise its full war strength of 107,000 (General Renard's estimate), including *volunteers* serving with the colours but not forming part of the contingent, and the *ninth and tenth classes* dismissed on permanent furlough, but still held liable to be enrolled on emergency.

Peace strength of army.

The effective peace strength is regulated annually by the law of the War Minister's Budget, drawn up so as to agree with the composition of the various arms and corps of the army, as fixed by Royal Orders in Council of 31st August, 1853, 15th April, 1868, and 29th January, 1874.

CHAPTER III.

Recruitment—General Rules: I. "Miliciens"—II. Bounty Volunteers (*volontaires avec prime*)—III. Substitutes (*remplaçants*)—IV. Volunteers Pure (*volontaires purs*)—Method of Selection for the different Branches and Concluding Remarks.

RECRUITMENT.

Liability to military service.

EVERY Belgian is bound during the year in which he attains the age of 19, to have his name inscribed on the conscription lists, with a view to taking part in the drawings for the military contingent of the following year. This obligation is also imposed on certain categories of foreigners.

"Milice."

The "*milice*"† includes that portion of the population borne on the conscription lists, and "*miliciens*" are those who being actually drawn by the conscription, perform obligatory service in the ranks.

In the Belgian Army there are four different classes of men in the ranks:—

**"Miliciens."
Bounty
volunteers.**

- I. The "*miliciens*," or men drawn by the conscription.
- II. *Bounty volunteers* (*volontaires avec prime*) or men who have made an engagement for military service with the Government, and whose presence in the ranks relieves an

* For details of this arrangement, see page 28—29.

† The term "*milice*" has been retained, since its meaning differs widely from the English "*militia*." The latter is (at present) a purely voluntary and intermittent service; in Belgium, on the other hand, the "*milicien*" performs *obligatory* and *continuous* service, until he becomes a trained soldier, when he is entitled to leave the ranks on unlimited furlough, with the liability to recall if required.

equal number of "miliciens" from service. In this case Bounty Government undertakes to provide the substitute, the volunteers. "milicien" who escapes service paying into the Treasury a certain lump sum, fixed year by year, and the payment of which frees him from service for ever.

- III. "*Remplaçants*," or substitutes provided directly by Remplaçants. miliciens, in default of the number of "bounty volunteers" being sufficient to fill all the vacancies. Categories II and III are frequently included under the head of "remplaçants," though the former are a superior class of men.
- IV. "*Volunteers*," or men who contract a voluntary engagement for military service from a liking for the profession, and generally with the intention of gaining commissions; to distinguish them from category II, they are officially styled "*volontaires purs*."

From the above it will be seen that the rank and file of the Army are provided partly by conscription, and partly by voluntary enlistment.

The conscription takes place early in the year, and the men who have become "miliciens," that is, liable for service, present themselves at the chief town of their province, about May or June, as may be directed. They are then medically examined, and if found fit for service, are distributed among the different arms of the service, and are told off to regiments, companies, batteries, and squadrons. They are allowed to return to their homes until 1st October, on which date they present themselves at the head-quarters of their regiments, if they belong to the cavalry; or at the dépôts of their regiments if they belong to infantry or artillery. Each man is then armed and equipped, and proceeds to join his squadron, company, or battery.

The length of service of the men drawn by the conscription is fixed at eight years, commencing from 2nd October of the year of their incorporation. During this time they pass periods of time with their corps varying from 28 months in the Infantry of the line to four years in the Field Artillery and Cavalry. The remainder of their service is passed on unlimited furlough, with the liability to be called up for service with their corps in case of necessity. In the Infantry and Artillery the men on furlough are always recalled twice, to serve for a month on each occasion, before the expiration of their service.

At the conclusion of their term of eight years, the "miliciens" are considered to be freed from service, and are no longer subject to certain restrictions. Their names, however, remain on the rolls of their corps for two years longer, during which time they may still be recalled to serve as follows:—

The Infantry in the non-active Battalions.	
The Cavalry " "	Train.
The Artillery " "	Batteries of Reserve.

I. MILICIENS.

Inscription.

The inscription is made officially by the burgomaster.

The inscription always takes place in the "commune," where the father of the "inscrit" resides, or in that of the "inscrit" himself, if he has lost his parents.

Residence is established by the fact of having lived continuously during one year in a "commune."

Any person not inscribed on the alphabetical list at the time the "commissaire d'arrondissement," checks it finally before proceeding to the drawing, is held to be a defaulter (*réfractaire*).

Defaulters cannot be prosecuted after the age of 36; they are not counted in the contingent of the canton.

The inscriptions are entered on a register, which is closed on 31st December; the list of "inscrits" is published on 3rd January. Protests and objections are received up to 12th January, by the burgomaster, who decides them, and transmits on the 13th the alphabetical list of "inscrits" to the "commissaire d'arrondissement." The "inscrits" may appeal up to 22nd January to the "commissaire" of the arrondissement against the decision of the burgomaster.

Drawing.

A Royal Order in Council divides each administrative "arrondissement" into "cantons de milice," composed of one or more "communes."

On the day fixed by the Governor of the Province, the drawing takes place in presence of the persons interested, under the direction of the "commissaire d'arrondissement." This functionary is assisted for cantons consisting of a single commune by two members of the "collège échevinal": for the other cantons by a member of the "collège échevinal" of the commune where the drawing takes place, and during the drawing of each commune by a member of its own "collège échevinal."

Composition
of annual
levy.

The annual levy for the Army is made up by those who draw the lowest numbers.

The calling up takes place according to the alphabetical order of the "communes," and in each commune according to the alphabetical order of the "inscrits."

Exemptions.

The following are wholly exempted:—

1st. Those whose height does not exceed 1.40 m. (4 ft. 7 in.).

2nd. Those suffering from incurable infirmities.

3rd. Any person whose brother has completed eight years' service, or died in the service.

The following are exempted for one year:—

1st. Those whose height is under 1.55 m. (5 ft. 1 in.)

2nd. Those suffering from curable infirmities.

3rd. The only legitimate descendant of a living person not of independent means. Exemptions

4th. The indispensable support of a family.

5th. A widower with one child, or more.

6th. Any person whose brother is serving for a term of eight years.

The following are dispensed from incorporation, but held available for service as regards the formation of the contingent:— Dispensations.

1. Ministers of religion.

2. Students in theology.

3. Members of State educational establishments.

4. Those who are preparing themselves for instruction in the State normal schools, or in establishments approved by Government.

The following are excluded from serving:—

Exclusions.

1st. Persons who have undergone a sentence by a military tribunal entailing military degradation, and those who have been dismissed for misconduct.

2nd. Persons condemned by an ordinary tribunal to a year's imprisonment for theft, abuse of confidence, or fraud, or to two years' imprisonment for any other offence.

There is in each administrative *arrondissement* a "conseil de milice," appointed by the King for each levy of the contingent; this conseil consists of a provincial councillor, of an "échevin" of the district, and of a field officer of the Army. The provincial councillor may not be a member of the permanent deputation of the provincial council; he undertakes the duties of President. "Conseils de milice."

The "commissaire d'arrondissement" sits with the council as referee, being permitted to speak, but not to vote. "Commissaire d'arrondissement."

The council is assisted by two medical men, appointed on the day before, or on the day of each sitting, by the President, and changed every day, if possible; the medical men may speak but do not vote, and are on oath.

The "collège échevinal" of each commune summons to their homes the persons interested, 14 days at least previous to their appearing before the council; the summons is also published, in accordance with legal forms. "Collège échevinal."

The council decides whether the men are eligible and fit for service; it decides on appeals against inscription on the lists; it grants exemptions and dispensations, and proceeds to examine the substitutes (*remplaçants*) brought forward by the "miliciens" of the "arrondissement." Its decisions are only in the first instance. Powers of "conseils de milice."

The operations of the council are completed in three sittings. The Governors fix the dates, so that the contingent may be brought forward at the latest on the 1st of July; the decisions

of the council are published at a public sitting, and recorded on the register of the drawing.

Publication of list of exemptions.

After each sitting the "commissaire d'arrondissement" sends to the administrations of the communes the roll of the men of the canton whom the council has exempted or excluded, and whose place must be filled up in the contingent by other "miliciens"; this roll is published and posted up in every commune.

Appeals before the "Députation Permanente."

Appeals from decision of "conseil de milice."

All the decisions of the "conseils de milice" may be appealed against by the "commissaire d'arrondissement," and by the interested parties, with the exception of substitutes.

The appeal must be made in writing, and addressed to the "députation permanente" within eight days of the decision of the "conseil de milice."

The deputation decides within 30 days of the receipt of the written appeal.

If the appeal is on account of sickness, or infirmity, the deputation is advised by a field officer, who has a vote.

The following may also be summoned in the same manner, and under the same conditions as before the "conseil de milice":—

1st. A civil practitioner, appointed the day before, or on the same day as the sitting by the President, and changed each sitting, if possible.

2nd. A military medical man, appointed in the same manner by the provincial commandant.

The decisions of the deputation are by an absolute majority of those present; the number voting may not be less than five. The facts are to be stated publicly, as well as the decision arrived at, but the voting is secret.

Final Appeals.

Final appeals.

The decisions of the deputation may be finally appealed against during the 15 following days.

The appellate court (*cour de cassation*) decides at once, to the exclusion of other business. Appeals of this description are not subject to expenses of stamps, registration, or fines.

If the appeal is allowed, the case is sent to the permanent deputation of another provincial council for disposal.

Of Substitution (Remplacement) and Exchange.

Substitution and exchange.

Every person drawn for the "milice" may provide a substitute for himself. Every substitute must fulfil the following conditions:—

1st. He must belong to the class of the current year, or a preceding year, and be under 30 years of age (or 36 years, if he has already served), on 31st December of the preceding year.

2nd. He must, if a minor, produce his father's consent.

3rd. He must be freed from obligation to serve. His admission as a substitute is considered to be invalidated if he draws a number rendering him liable to service. Substitution and exchange.

4th. He must fulfil the conditions of height and physical aptitude.

5th. He must produce a certificate from the communal administration that he is of good character, unmarried, or a widower without a child, and that he has not been imprisoned for theft, cheating, abuse of confidence, or criminal attempts.

6th. He must produce, if he has served, certificates of good conduct and efficiency, signed by the colonel of his former corps.

Every case of substitution (*remplacement*) must be substantiated by a contract drawn up by a notary, excepting where a brother is replaced by a brother, or where a "milicien" has a substitute (bounty volunteer) directly found for him by the War Department.

Exchanges of numbers are permitted between two "miliciens" of the current year, even though they belong to different provinces.

The War Minister may authorise similar exchanges between "miliciens" finally incorporated.

The War Department is authorised to effect replacement by bounty volunteers (*volontaires avec prime*).

This method of substitution, and the conditions laid down by the Order in Council of 10th November, 1870, are very similar to the provisions of the French law of 1855. The "milicien" wishing to procure a substitute, frees himself from obligation to the State by paying into the Treasury a sum of 1,600 francs (£64). See "volontaires avec prime." Page 29.

Bounty volunteers must fulfil the same conditions as substitutes. The limit as regards age is from 16 to 35 years, if they have not served, and to 40 years if they have served.

Incorporation.

The Minister of the Interior fixes the date on which men named for service are to be handed over to the military authorities. Incorporation.

The act of handing over takes place at the chief town of the province by the Governor. The persons interested receive beforehand from the Governor an order to join. As soon as they "miliciens" quit their commune *en route* for the chief town they are rationed and clothed at the expense of the State.

At the time of handing over, the military authorities have both "miliciens" and "remplaçants" examined by military surgeons. The same authorities also send back within 30 days to the permanent deputation the men unfit for service, and the canton furnishes in order according to the numbers drawn, other men to fill up its quota.

Furloughs.

Furloughs
and periods of
active service.

"Miliciens" and "remplaçants" have a right to a furlough of one month during each year of service. They are sent away on unlimited furlough when they have served 28 months in the Infantry of the line, subject to three recalls of a month at a time under arms; three years in the Grenadiers, Carabiniers, Siege Artillery, Engineers, Pontoniers, and Artificers, subject to two recalls of a month at a time under arms; four years in Field and Horse Artillery batteries, the Cavalry, and Train, subject to a recall of one month under arms.

They are struck off the rolls after eight years' service, but are still subject to military law in time of war, the King being authorised to call up any number of the classes on furlough that he judges fit.

During the mobilisation of 1870 the ten last classes were called up, those from 1861 to 1868, of which the contingents originally incorporated were of 10,000 men, and those of 1869 and 1870, which were of 12,000 each. It was calculated that the total of these classes would give an army of 100,000 men.

General Considerations.

General provisions of
the law of
recruitment.

The law of 3rd June, 1870 (modified by that of 18th September, 1873) laid down that the recruitment of the army should be by engagements, and by annual calls ("appels") or conscription.

From 1869 to 1873 the annual contingent was divided into two portions, the active and reserve, the latter of which was assigned to the Infantry, and fixed at one-twelfth of the contingent. The law of 1873 finally disposed of the question of the unification of the contingent by the suppression of the contingent of reserve.

Marriage of
persons sub-
ject to the
law on the
"milice."

Persons coming under the provisions of the law on the "milice" between the ages of 19 and 36, are only allowed to marry on the production of a certificate stating that they have complied with the provisions of this law. They must produce the same certificate in order to obtain a licence, a passport, or any employment paid by the State, the province, or the commune.

Defaulters.

Any person not having had his name inscribed is a defaulter (*réfractaire*); if he is fit for service he is incorporated for eight years, without counting in the contingent assigned to his canton. The King may, however, place him on the same footing as other "miliciens," as regards furlough and substitution (*remplacement*).

Deducting young men finally or provisionally exempted, there remained during the period 1871—1875 160,279 fulfilling the conditions required for joining the ranks of the army. The Government was authorised to raise five contingents of 12,000

men each, or 60,000. There remained then 100,279 men, who were liable to form part of extraordinary contingents such as that which was called up in 1832. That is to say, the ratio between the number of men for service and the number of those who fulfil the conditions required for the defence of the country is in the proportion of about three to eight.

Distribution of the Contingents.

The distribution of the contingent is made by the King between the provinces in proportion to the number of those inscribed (*inscrits*) for the levy. Distribution of the contingents.

Previous to the law of 3rd June, 1870, the permanent deputations distributed the contingent to the communes; since 1871 they assign the contingent to the "cantons de milice," composed of one or several neighbouring communes belonging to the same "arrondissement."

The distribution of the contingent to the different corps is made by Royal Order in Council.

The Provincial Commandants detail the "miliciens" to the corps indicated in the Order in Council relative to the distribution of the contingent to the army, and have the military laws at once read to them.

By the fact of their incorporation, and by their having had these laws read to them, they become soldiers (*militaires*).

Postponement for reference to the Permanent Deputations and "Conseils de Révision."

As soon as the contingent is handed over to the military authorities the "miliciens" are examined by the army surgeons, and those who appear unfit for service have to undergo a fresh examination. Up to 1873 this examination took place before the permanent deputations of Provincial Councils. In accordance with the law of 18th September, 1873, it is now made by the "conseils de révision," composed of three military members and three members of the permanent deputation, with the Governor as President, and with the assistance, for purposes of consultation, of a civil medical practitioner and a military surgeon. Postponement.

Losses of the Contingents before and after their Incorporation in the Army.

a. Incompleteness of the Contingents.

The results of the annual levies show that none of the contingents voted by the Legislature reach the army intact.

In the period between 1871 and 1875 these casualties amounted to 4,030 men, or .067 of the contingents voted.

Losses before incorporation.

b. *Discharged as unfit for Service.*

Losses of the contingents.

The losses of the classes of "milice" from this cause reached from 1871 to 1875 the total of 917, that is to say, 727 "miliciens" and 190 bounty volunteers and substitutes, or '015 of the contingent.

c. *Dismissal on account of Privileges acquired after Incorporation.*

The loss from this cause during the same period was 1,077, or an average of 215 per annum.

d. *Defaulters.*

The number of defaulters was in the same period 1,537, or 0·256 of the contingent.

e. *Desertions.*

From 1871 to 1875 the numbers of deserters reached 6,959, of whom 2,614 gave themselves up or were arrested. The number remaining absent was 4,345, or an average of 869 per annum.

The losses from desertion in the different branches of the service between 1871 and 1875 were as follow :—

	Number of desertions.	Number of deserters returned or arrested.	Number remain- ing absent.
Infantry	4,733	1,746	2,987
Cavalry	1,098	471	627
Artillery	921	359	562
Engineers	137	13	124
Other corps	70	25	45
Total	6,959	2,614	4,345

f. *Military Degradation.*

The number of men condemned to this punishment during the same period was 271, of whom 69 were volunteers, 89 "miliciens," 4 bounty volunteers, and 109 substitutes.

g. *Dismissal from the Army.*

Between 1871 and 1875 the number of men dismissed was 644, including 348 volunteers, 106 "miliciens," 7 bounty volunteers, and 183 substitutes.

h. *Deaths.*

Between 1871 and 1875 the number of deaths of sub-officers and soldiers reached 3,748.

Of these, 254 took place with their regiments, 1,288 in hospital, and 2,206 at their homes.

It is suspected that notice of the death of "miliciens" on

furlough is not always brought to the knowledge of officers ^{Losses of the} commanding corps by the local authorities, whose business it is ^{contingents.} to do so.

Non-effectives.

The number of "miliciens" of the different categories who are reckoned in the contingents, but have never borne arms, reached in the period from 1871 to 1875 2,493.

These non-effectives were as follow :—

"Miliciens" liable for service, but dispensed from incorporation, viz., ministers of religion, students in theology or philosophy, pupil teachers, school-masters and under masters in possession of a certificate (Art. 28, Law on "Milice").. ..	875
"Miliciens" counted in the contingent, viz., volunteers engaged before the drawings (Art. 5, Law on "Milice"), and students of the second year at the Military School (Art. 2, Law of 18th March, 1838).	1,618
Total	2,493

The number of "miliciens" inscribed on the lists was—

In 1870	44,078
„ 1875	42,122
„ 1878	48,631

the contingent being 12,000.

Out of every 100 men of the contingent there were—

	In 1870.	In 1875.	In 1878.
Incorporated in person	76	74	74
„ by "remplacement"	5	13	13
„ by substitution	16*	—	—

82 per cent. of "miliciens" *signed* the declaration after the reading of the military laws in 1878 as compared with 68 per cent. in 1870, thus showing a steady increase in the spread of education.

Since 1869 the annual contingent has been fixed at 12,000; ^{Annual} but owing to the numerous cases of dispensation in addition to ^{contingent.} other causes of loss (absence, desertion, discharge with ignominy, sentence by court-martial, compulsory dismissal, deaths), the contingents annually voted suffered such reduction, that it materially affected the number of effectives necessary for the army.

On the other hand, the number of voluntary engagements was much below what had been calculated.

In order to put a stop to this state of things the legislature from 1879 fixed the annual *effective* contingent at 12,000. Those

* The law of 3rd June, 1870, suppressed substitution, which entirely freed the principal from all liability, personal or pecuniary.

Annual contingents.

who have obtained a dispensation for family reasons, &c., are replaced within a space of 40 days from the time the contingent is called up under arms. The next lowest numbers do not supply the deficiency; but a supplementary drawing takes place among the "inscrits" of all the cantons of recruitment, and from them the deficiencies are filled up: the distribution takes place in the same manner as for the whole contingent.

The casualties above noticed are those which occur, and are known before the process of incorporation. They may therefore be supplied at short notice as we have seen; but those which occur after incorporation have to be provided for by an augmentation of the contingent of the following year.

Up to 1888 the total of the contingent will vary each year, to make up for the deficiency actually existing, and arising from previous classes beginning with that of 1879. But from 1888 the total will become as nearly as possible invariable, and will be distributed over the sum total of the seven preceding classes.

The Bill fixing the contingent for 1881, laid before the Chamber of Representatives by the War Minister on 10th December, 1880, increases the normal contingent of 12,000 by 533 to fill up the casualties of the class of 1879—the first which up to the present time has benefited from the principle which lays down that the annual *effective* strength of the contingent is to be 12,000 men; in other words, to be really incorporated in the army and maintained constantly up to strength.

The normal contingent of 1882 will on this principle be supplemented for the casualties occurring between 1st October, 1880, and 1st October, 1881, by the contingents of 1879 and 1880, and so on, up to the contingent of 1888, which will have its casualties filled up from 1st October, 1886, to 1st October, 1887, by the eight classes, 1879 to 1886, both years inclusive.

From 1888 the augmentation will be normal, and will fill up from year to year the casualties in the eight classes of which the army is composed.

General Renard stated in the Senate in the sitting of 27th December, 1878, that this normal rate was about 1,442 men, or 12½ per cent., a calculation much below the actual rate.

The first augmentation being 533 men, the 2nd, 3rd, 4th, up to 7th inclusive, will be respectively 664, 795, 926, 1,057, 1,188, and 1,319, supposing the increment to be regular, which is, of course, not exactly accurate.

Thus the contingents will amount to:—

For 1881	..	..	..	12,533	effectives.
„ 1882	..	..	..	12,664	„
„ 1883	..	..	..	12,795	„
„ 1884	..	..	..	12,926	„
„ 1885	..	..	..	13,057	„
„ 1886	..	..	..	13,188	„
„ 1887	..	..	..	13,319	„
„ 1888	..	..	..	13,450	„

Dating from 1888 the contingents will remain at 13,450 effectives. Annual contingents.

The contingent of 1888 will be voted by the Legislature in December, 1887, and will be incorporated 1st October, 1888.

On 1st October, 1888, the army will really include eight contingents of 12,000 effectives, or an estimated total of 96,000 men; but in case of mobilisation the actual number will not exceed 85,000 men, because at the moment of recall there will be casualties in addition amounting to about 12 per cent. This is a deduction from the experience of the Mobilisation of 1870. Thus the total number of casualties in the eight contingents at the moment of their call to arms will amount to $12\frac{1}{2} + 12$, or about $24\frac{1}{2}$ per cent., of which $12\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. is supplied by the annual increment as above. The 85,000 men, plus 4,000 or 5,000 volunteers in the army, give a total of 90,000, whereas the actual organisation assumes an effective strength of 107,000 men. There will be thus 17,000 wanting, and this deficiency can hardly be filled by the ninth and tenth classes of the "milice," of whom a large proportion are married, and cannot therefore be recalled to the colours. Numbers available for mobilisation 1888.

Following the same lines, there would be on mobilisation in 1882 a deficiency of 21,600 on the eight classes 1874-1881, or say 75,000 men present. Adding 5,000 volunteers in the ranks, and allowing that 10,000 are available from the classes 1872 and 1873, there would be a total of 90,000 men all told for mobilisation. Numbers available 1882.

II. *BOUNTY VOLUNTEERS OR VOLONTAIRES AVEC PRIME.

The substitutes provided by Government are called *volontaires avec prime* or *bounty volunteers*. They are men who, being freed from liability to service, and possessing the proper qualifications, engage as soldiers in view of certain pecuniary advantages. A Royal Decree fixes annually the amount of money to be paid to bounty volunteers, and independently of this remuneration they receive extra pay at the rate of 10 centimes (1d.) a day, while present with their corps. Conditions of service.

They engage for the same conditions of service in nearly all respects as those to which "miliciens" are liable, and after a man has completed one term of service he may engage for another if he fulfils the requisite conditions of health and age.

The Government allows a number of "miliciens" to purchase exemption from service equal to the number of bounty volunteers who have engaged. The price paid to Government by the Method and conditions of procuring bounty volunteers.

* This is considered to be a misnomer, and derogatory to the true volunteer—who comes forward without being bribed, from sheer love of the profession of a soldier—since the name confounds him to a certain degree with the mercenary.

GENERAL RESULT OF LEVIES OF "MILICE."

Designation.	1850.	1860.	1865.	1870.	1875.	1878.	1879.
Inscribed for the year	38,487	44,196	44,455	44,078	42,122	48,631	50,159
Definitively exempted	4,167	3,701	3,299	3,187	*2,670	2,835	2,976
Ditto for one year	11,504	12,618	10,964	10,521	*6,244	6,577	7,250
Passed for service	22,816	27,877	30,192	30,370	*12,000	12,000	12,000
Excluded from serving .. ..	..	..	..	..	*8	16	23
(1). INSCRIBED FOR THE YEAR.							
Incorporated in person	7,071	6,479	5,768	8,428	8,917	8,892	8,827
Ditto by replacement	729	1,192	998	557	1,587	1,513	1,582
Ditto by substitution †	771	1,323	1,908	1,889	†	†	†
(2). "INSCRIPTS" PUT BACK FROM FORMER YEARS.							
Incorporated in person	1,179	647	809	660	725	835	846
Ditto by replacement	29	30	20	12	48	55	46
Ditto by substitution	49	58	109	64	..	..	..
Total incorporated	9,828	9,729	9,612	11,610	11,277	11,295	11,301
"Miliciens" of year dispensed from incorporation by virtue of Art. 28 of law of June 3rd, 1870 ..	..	..	..	..	..	197	179
Volunteers inscribed for the year including 2nd year students of military school (Art. 5 of same law) .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	317	328
Defaulters	172	271	388	390	231	191	192
Contingent Total..	10,000	10,000	10,000	12,000	12,000	12,000	12,000

* These figures and those of the following years show exclusively the number of "miliciens" who appeared before the "conseil de milice" or "conseil de révision," and whose number drawn was called to form the yearly contingent.

For years before 1875 the figures refer to all the "inscripts" of the class: many of these were entitled to exemption, but did not take the trouble to claim it, having drawn high numbers.

† Substitution was abolished by law, 3rd June, 1870.

"miliciens" desiring to purchase a substitute is fixed annually by Royal Decree, but it may not exceed 1,800 francs (£72). Method and conditions of procuring bounty volunteers.

There is no direct communication between these bounty volunteers and the "miliciens." The matter is entirely arranged in a Government office in the following manner. Application is made to the War Department on behalf of the "milicien" who desires to be replaced, and a sum of 200 francs (£8) is lodged. As the number of bounty volunteers is always considerably less than the number of applicants, the names of the "miliciens" who are to profit by the substitution of bounty volunteers are decided by lot. If successful the "milicien" is relieved from service on completing the sum to be paid to Government. If unsuccessful he must serve, and the 200 francs which were lodged on his behalf are returned to him. If he is relieved from service he receives a certificate to that effect, and he can under no circumstances be again liable. A reward of 200 francs (£8) is paid to the bringer by Government for every substitute. The bringers are certain classes of persons who are appointed by Government as eligible for this work.

There is still a loophole of escape allowed to "miliciens" for whom the War Department cannot find substitutes. See "Remplaçants," page 33.

The regulations for bounty volunteers or substitution through the War Department have undergone various modifications. Up to 1870 this took place by virtue of the Royal Order in Council of 2nd September, 1848. The law of 3rd June, 1870, which allowed every "milicien" drawn for service to procure a substitute, directly authorised the War Department to procure substitutes otherwise than by the ordinary regulations, and conferred on the King the right of laying down the method and conditions of substitution.

The Royal Order in Council of 10th November, 1870, in execution of the above arrangements, raised the price of a substitute to 1,600 francs. "Miliciens" who wished to have substitutes provided by the War Department had to make a deposit of 800 francs. The remaining 800 francs had to be lodged within 10 days of a notice that the substitute had been provided.

The law of 18th September, 1873, completely altered the conditions of substitution.

All persons drawn for service may now procure substitutes, but everyone availing himself of this privilege must, in the first instance, deposit 200 francs, and no "milicien" is permitted to procure a substitute *directly* unless he has lodged this sum, and the War Department cannot find a substitute for him before the 1st October. In the latter case he is allowed till 1st January following to find a man to supply his place, and the 200 francs lodged are returned to him. In all other cases the sum lodged goes to the "fund for the provision of substitutes."

The bonus on engagement allowed to soldiers by the Order in Council of 2nd September, 1848, was 600 francs, out of which they received an instalment of 50 francs. The sum of Regulations of September, 1848.

Regulations of September, 1848. 550 francs remaining was payable at the end of the period of service for which the men had re-engaged. At the same time during the last five years of their service, they were allowed to receive out of this residue advances in proportion to the time of service accomplished, when it could be shown that such advances were necessary for themselves, or for the members of their family.

Those who had served two periods of re-engagement had the right to an annuity of 200 francs at the expiration of the second term.

Regulations of November, 1870. Bounty volunteers who engaged under the Order in Council of 10th November, 1870, were rewarded as follows:—

- 1st. Either by a sum of 300 francs payable in a lump sum at the time of final admission, or by successive instalments, as the War Minister judged advisable; in addition to 1,000 francs at the expiration of the engagement.
- 2nd. Or 300 francs, payable as above, and 600 francs payable on the expiration of the period of service. Those serving out two terms under these latter conditions to receive an annuity of 200 francs at the expiration of the second period of engagement.

At present Royal Orders in Council fix year by year the remuneration to be granted to bounty volunteers.

Present regulations. Since 1874 this remuneration has been fixed at 1,600 francs, and the method of payment is as follows:—

300 francs payable in a lump sum at the time of final admission, or by successive instalments, at the discretion of the War Minister: 500 francs at the time of liberation on unlimited furlough: 550 francs at the expiration of the eighth year of service: and 250 francs after deducting the sum due to the clothing fund, on discharge.

The pension of 200 francs has been abolished. The bounty volunteers who came under one of the first-mentioned categories, as regards the loss of their rights to the remainder of the bonus, and the other advantages accorded to them, have their places supplied by other volunteers who engage to finish their term of service.

In accordance with Order in Council of 10th November, 1870, these last-mentioned bounty volunteers must engage for five years. The bonus allowed them was 500 francs, of which 150 francs were payable when the engagement began. The residue of 350 francs to be paid at the expiration of the fifth year of service.

The Royal Order in Council of 4th October, 1873, ruled that any person engaging to complete the term of service of a bounty volunteer who had resigned his privileges, should receive the balance due to the said volunteer. An Order in Council of 3rd February, 1876, modified this arrangement.

Extra pay.

In addition to the allowances above detailed all "volontaires

avec prime" to whatever category they belong, are entitled to extra pay (*haute paie*) at the rate of 10 centimes a day while present with their regiment. Bounty volunteers may be deprived of this extra pay for misconduct. The officer commanding the corps immediately acquaints the War Minister, and sends in a detailed report of the reasons which have caused the deprivation. If the man's conduct improves, the extra pay may be again granted him on the recommendation of his commanding officer.

III. SUBSTITUTES OR REMPLAÇANTS.

Every person drawn for the "milice" may get himself replaced. Every person drawn for the "milice" may get himself replaced. Substitution* was abolished by the law of 3rd June, 1870.

The "miliciens" whom the War Department cannot replace by means of bounty volunteers, are allowed to find substitutes for themselves, and to present them for approval. This is generally done by means of a "marchand d'hommes," or agent. The substitutes thus provided must belong to the class of men liable to conscription in the current year, or to a previous class, without being more than 30 years old, or in the case of men who have previously served, 36 years old. They must be freed from liability to serve on their own account, and must fulfil all conditions moral and physical.

If the substitute presented for approval passes all inspections and is accepted, the "milicien" who produces him receives a certificate to the effect "that having been replaced he is allowed to go to his home." If, however, it is subsequently found that the substitute thus passed into the service has made false statements with regard to his qualifications, or if he deserts, is discharged for misconduct, or condemned to military degradation, the "milicien" for whom he served must either provide another substitute within two months, or serve personally.

This method of obtaining a substitute, besides rendering the "milicien" himself, to a certain degree responsible for the good conduct of his representative, is very expensive, and the expense increases each year. As the substitute must possess the physical qualifications necessary for the particular corps to which the "milicien" whom he replaces was allotted, it follows that for the special corps it is difficult to find properly qualified men, and their value increases accordingly. The present value of a substitute varies from about 2,000 francs (£80) for the Infantry, to 3,000 francs (£120) and 3,500 francs (£140) for the Grenadiers.

"Remplaçants" are bound by exactly the same liabilities as the "miliciens" to length of service with the colours, &c., as the "miliciens" for whom they serve.

* A difference was then drawn between "substitution," which absolutely freed the man, and "remplacement," which left him partly responsible.

Up to 1875 replacement took place by the direct intervention of the War Department. Substitutes produced before the incorporation of the "miliciens" in the army, were admitted by the "conseils de milice," or by the provincial commissions. Those who were produced after incorporation were admitted by officers commanding corps.

Article 33 of the law of 27th April, 1870, allowed a "milicien" replaced directly by a substitute to free himself from the responsibility of his substitute by paying the sum of 150 florins (£12 15s.) after the substitute had served actively for eighteen months.

The law of 3rd June, 1870, did away with this. By this law all miliciens who provided their own "remplaçants" or substitutes, were bound to lodge a sum of 400 francs as security within ten days of the final admission of the substitute. This security was returnable half at a time: first half when the substitutes admitted in accordance with this law were sent away on unlimited furlough; second half when they received their final dismissal. The sum lodged as security becomes the property of the State (1) if the "remplaçant" becomes unfit for service by voluntary mutilation, or by reason of infirmities fraudulently produced since his incorporation, or brought on by misconduct; (2) if by one or more sentences he has had entered against him, more than 60 days of desertion in the active army, or more than 15 days when on unlimited furlough; (3) if discharged from the service with ignominy.

Law of 18th
September,
1873.

Present regu-
lations.

The law of 1870 was again modified by that of the 18th September, 1873.

"Miliciens" for whom the War Department has been unable to find substitutes, and who are under the obligation to provide their own substitutes, may free themselves from all responsibility by lodging in the "fund for provision of substitutes" (*caisse de remplacement*) ten days after the final admission of the substitute, a sum of 800 francs.

Substitutes of those "miliciens" who do not take advantage of the above provision, must within the same period of time deposit in the regimental chest a sum of 250 francs. This sum is returned to them at the time of their being finally dismissed, after their debts to the clothing fund have been deducted; but if they desert, or are discharged for misconduct, or condemned to military degradation, or if the "remplacement" is pronounced null and void, owing to the production of papers which are false, or which state facts materially false, the sum lodged is paid after the deduction of debts due, to the "miliciens" who have been replaced; the latter are bound to find another substitute.

IV. VOLUNTEERS (*Volontaires purs*).

Conditions for
volunteers.

Every Belgian may contract a voluntary engagement on the following conditions:—

1st. He must be 14 years of age at least, and at most

35 years, if he has not served; 40 years at most if he has served. Conditions for volunteers.

2nd. He must be of the standard height for the corps he is to belong to. In special cases the War Minister may grant indulgences as regards height.

3rd. He must produce, if a minor, the consent in writing of his father or of his mother (if a widow), or if he is an orphan, of his authorised guardian.

4th. A certificate of sentences of imprisonment he has undergone, or otherwise. If the man has served he must produce his furlough in addition. Foreigners are permitted to volunteer under certain conditions. In special cases married men or widowers with children may be enrolled.

The duration of the engagement is 8 years. Youths under the age of 16 must sign an engagement to serve 8 years from the date of their completing their 16th year. They cannot be appointed corporal before that age.

The duration of re-engagement is for two years at least.

"Miliciens" and substitutes (*remplaçants*) may contract a voluntary engagement for their regiment. If belonging to the infantry they may be permitted on the recommendation of their commanding officers to engage for other arms. Those who do not belong to the infantry can only engage for their respective corps, or for corps of that arm of the service.

Every engagement entailing a change of corps is to be submitted for approval to the War Minister.

The period of engagement for "miliciens" and substitutes is for three years at least for the Infantry of the Line, Chasseurs-à-pied, and Battalion of Administration; for four years at least for Rifles (*carabiniers*) and Grenadiers; for six years at least for other arms.

At the expiration of their engagement, "miliciens" and substitutes resume their position as "miliciens" or substitutes.

A volunteer is only enrolled if found fit after medical examination by an army surgeon.

Officers commanding corps are authorised to enrol youths of at least 16 years of age as corporals or "brigadiers," who are well educated, and give promise of becoming efficient sub-officers.

In time of war a volunteer may engage either for two years or for the duration of the war.

Since 1871 the number of volunteers has sensibly diminished: from 7,264 in 1871 they dwindled to 6,289 in 1875, or a diminution of nearly one-ninth in five years.

The number of "miliciens" and substitutes who between 1871 and 1875 contracted voluntary engagements, amounted to 2,418.

In the five years between 1871 and 1875, the number of voluntary engagements reached 2,296; 372 of eight years, 94 of six years, 22 of five years, 138 of four years, 19 of three years, and 1,651 of two years. Re-engagements.

SELECTION OF MEN FOR THE VARIOUS ARMS, AND CONCLUDING REMARKS.

Marriage of soldiers.

After four years' service, "miliciens" and substitutes may get married. Volunteers must obtain the sanction of the War Minister.

The temporary periods of leave and unlimited furloughs are refused to men whose conduct has been unsatisfactory.

Annual inspections of men on furlough.

The men on unlimited furlough are obliged to be present with their military kit at two inspections each year, and cannot take up their residence abroad except under certain conditions (see Mobilisation, p. 81). Those who infringe these regulations may be recalled to the colours for periods varying from one to six months, independently of the fines and imprisonment to which they may be condemned for infraction of the law on the "milice."

Choice of men for different branches.

The choice of men for the different arms, and their subsequent distribution, are made by the commandant of the province, assisted by officers of each arm, in the following order:—

1. Pontoniers.
2. Artificers.
3. Engineers.
4. Grenadiers.
5. Siege artillery.
6. Field artillery.
7. Guides.
8. Lancers.
9. Chasseurs-à-cheval.
10. Carabiniers.
11. Infantry of the line and chasseurs-à-pied.
12. Train.
13. Battalion of administration.

Regulations regarding choice of men for the Infantry.

Formerly all arms had the priority of choice over the infantry, but a circular of 4th April, 1879, called attention to the fact that the infantry had thus not only to support the deficiencies of the contingents, but had also to receive the men rejected by other branches, or those the lowest in physique and intelligence, and was thus placed in a relatively inferior position entirely opposed to the important rôle it has to play, which requires a robust constitution and especial amount of activity.

Allotment of "miliciens" by commandant of provinces.

As the detachments of "miliciens" arrive each day, the commandants of provinces allot them daily in proportion to the number required for each branch of the service.

Before this is done each "milicien" is to be examined by a military surgeon. The test for a good foot soldier, who may be required to make forced marches in all weathers with a full knapsack, rifle, ammunition, and rations is dwelt on, and laid down to be—capacity of chest, proportion of height to weight, healthy limbs, robust constitution, ribs long and symmetrical,

broad shoulders, muscular loins, strong spine, and well-shaped feet. Such men are to be reserved as far as possible for the Infantry: the Artillery and Cavalry are to be selected from the remainder; and for the Train and Battalion of Administration men are to be taken who do not seem fit for the combatant branches.

Stress is laid on the fact that the commandants themselves are to tell off the men for the different corps, as the selection is of the utmost importance to the army.

In order to facilitate the selection of men for the Engineers and other corps requiring special qualifications, nominal rolls are furnished to commandants of provinces of the men among the "miliciens" who have had the particular training required. It happens sometimes that "miliciens" intentionally delay presenting themselves for enrolment in order that the numbers of recruits required for the special corps which retain their soldiers long in the ranks may be completed, hoping thus to be sent to the infantry of the line, whose service is short with the colours. Commandants of provinces are authorised to meet this trick by allotting "miliciens" who fulfil the conditions to the special corps even if the contingents of these corps are already complete.

If any man has a strong and reasonable wish to serve in one corps rather than another, his wish is complied with if the arrangement can be made without prejudice to the public service.

The standard of height for the different corps is as follows, and is to be rigidly adhered to, except in the case of the Engineers, for which corps men otherwise eligible may be selected, even if they are below the proper height:—

			Minimum.					
			m.	ft.	in.			
Chasseurs-à-pied and Infantry of the Line			1'55	= 5	1			
Carabiniers			1'62	= 5	3'8			
Grenadiers			1'70	= 5	6'9			
						Maximum.		
						m.	ft.	in.
Chasseurs-à-Cheval			1'64	= 5	4'5	1'67	= 5	5'7
Lancers			1'66	= 5	5'3	1'70	= 5	6'9
Guides			1'69	= 5	6'5	1'71	= 5	7'3
Field Artillery			1'67	= 5	5'7	1'72	= 5	7'7
Siege Artillery			1'68	= 5	6	and upwards.		
Artificers			1'55	= 5	1	,,		
Pontoniers			1'70	= 5	6'9	,,		
Train			1'65	= 5	4'9	,,		
Engineers			1'65	= 5	4'9	,,		
Administration			1'55	= 5	1	,,		

Service begins on 1st October, on which date they present themselves at the headquarters of their regiments if they belong to the Cavalry, or at the dépôts of their regiments if they belong to the Infantry or Artillery. The training of the recruits is commenced at this season of the year in order that the men may be sufficiently advanced by the following spring. Each man is then armed and equipped, and joins his squadron, company, or battery.

Allotment of "miliciens" by commandant of provinces.

Selection for the Engineers and special branches.

Men may serve in the corps they select. Standard of height.

Commencement of service.

General
character of
"miliciens."

The great mass of the army consists of "miliciens." They are as a rule willing and tolerably intelligent soldiers. Those from the country districts are better than the townsmen, as they are usually more robust and amenable to discipline. The Flemish are slow, but make good soldiers when trained; the Walloons are more intelligent, but not so steady.

Although a proportion of the "miliciens," especially in the Infantry of the line, become non-commissioned officers, and even engage voluntarily for the purpose of following a military career, the greater number take the earliest opportunity of reverting to civil life.

Of bounty
volunteers.

The bounty volunteers are not generally considered a good class of soldier. It is generally found that it is only men who cannot make their way in civil life who become bounty volunteers. The old soldiers amongst them who have re-engaged are useful, but the others are of little comparative value.

Of sub-
stitutes or
"rempla-
çants."

The substitutes (*remplaçants*) who come into the service, having made the best market they can of their physical capabilities, are considered by all the officers as the worst soldiers in the Belgian army. They are generally drawn from the lowest class of the population, and though they sometimes make good soldiers, are as a rule not well conducted, and give much trouble. There are more of them in the Infantry of the line than in any of the other corps, as the qualifications required are easily found, and service with the colours is not so long as in some of the special corps.

Volunteers.

The volunteers are generally speaking the best and most intelligent men in the ranks. As most of them come into the army with a certain amount of education, and with the intention of making it a profession, they rapidly become non-commissioned officers, and generally get further promotion.

Proportion of
the different
categories in
the Army.

The proportion of the different categories of the army was from 1871 to 1875:—

"Miliciens"	64,696
Bounty volunteers	1,026
Substitutes and "remplaçants" ..	21,032
Volunteers	7,730

Proportion of
crime.

According to the evidence of General Brialmont, the proportion of men lost to the army by desertion, sentence of court-martial, or misconduct, is in the proportion of 12 substitutes to 1 "milicien."

The following percentage of sentences by court-martial in 1880 gives a fair idea of the comparative value as soldiers of the different classes of men composing the Belgian army:—

"Miliciens"	2.1 per cent.
Volunteers (pure)	3.3 "
Bounty volunteers	4.2 "
Substitutes	17.4 "

The Mixed Commission of 1871, composed of 15 Senators and Representatives, and 12 generals and officers of other ranks, voted, with only four dissentient voices, for the abolition of substitution and the establishment of obligatory service, that is, the obligation of every one inscribed on the lists and drawn by lot to serve in person, without replacement or substitution. There appears, however, at present no chance of any innovation of the kind. The chief voting power lies with the lower "bourgeoisie," who can afford to pay for substitutes, and thus avoid personal service.

CHAPTER IV.

ACTIVE ARMY (COMBATANTS).

[For tabular statement of peace and war strength of various branches, see Appendix I, pp. 168—176.]

Origin of the Combatant Branches—Staff and Staff Corps—Infantry—Cavalry—Artillery—Matériel—Train—Cavalry and Infantry Ammunition Columns and Field Parks—Engineers.

INFANTRY.

THE regiments Nos. 1 to 11 of the Infantry of the Line were formed in 1830, from the remnant of the 1st, 3rd, 4th, 6th, 11th, 12th, 14th, 15th, 16th, 17th, and 18th Divisions of the Army of Low Countries. Origin of different corps.
Infantry 1st—12th.

The 12th Regiment of the Line, the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Regiments of Chasseurs-à-Pied were formed in 1830, and 1831 of different corps of volunteers which sprang up during the Revolution. The 1st Regiment of Chasseurs received successively the designations of "1er Régiment de Chasseurs Carabiniers" and of "Régiment de Carabiniers." Chasseurs.
Carabiniers.

A "régiment d'élite" was raised in 1837, by the reunion of the "compagnies d'élite" of the 4th Battalion of regiments of the line; it was called first, the "Régiment de Grenadiers et de Voltigeurs réunis," and in 1850 the "Régiment de Grenadiers." Grenadiers.

By the organisation of 29th January, 1874, three new regiments, one of Chasseurs and two of Infantry, were raised, and received the titles respectively of 1st Chasseurs-à-Pied and 13th and 14th of the Line.

CAVALRY.

The 1st and 2nd Regiments of Chasseurs were formed in 1830 from the remnants of the 6th and 8th Regiments of Hussars of the Army of the Low Countries; the 1st and 2nd Chasseurs.
Lancers.

Lancers. Regiments of Lancers received the men of the 10th Regiment of Lancers, and of the 4th and 5th Regiments of Light Dragoons. A regiment of Cuirassiers was formed in 1830, and reorganised in 1831; in 1836 this regiment, which had eight squadrons, was doubled. The two regiments of cuirassiers were transformed in 1862 into two regiments of lancers which were numbered 3 and 4.

Guides. The regiment of Guides was organised in 1833; it was formed from a company called the "Guides de la Meuse," raised in 1830 by the enrolment of veteran cuirassiers and dragoons discharged from the Dutch service; in 1839, the number of squadrons of this regiment was raised to six. The organisation of 29th January, 1874, created a second regiment of Guides, in which have been incorporated the two squadrons of the Riding School at Ypres; all the cavalry regiments were at the same time raised to a strength of *five* squadrons.

Artillery.

ARTILLERY.

In 1830 were formed successively—

Ten companies of foot artillery (*artillerie de campagne-à-pied*).

Ten companies of "artillerie de milice."

One company of dépôt gunners (*cannoniers sédentaires*).

One company of artillery at the arsenal of construction.

Two companies of artillery train; in 1831 another company was added.

In 1832, a new company of foot artillery was raised, a company of pontoniers, and a company of horse artillery; the companies of "artillerie de milice" were converted into three siege batteries, and the train—raised to a strength of four companies—was constituted a battalion.

This organisation lasted till 1834. The corps of artillery was then composed of a staff, a regiment of field artillery (*artillerie de campagne*), three battalions of siege artillery, of a company of pontoniers, a company of military workmen, a company of dépôt gunners, and a battalion of the train.

In 1836, the field artillery and siege artillery were organised in three regiments, comprising each 6 field or horse artillery batteries, 6 siege batteries, and 1 dépôt battery. The company of stationary dépôt was formed into a company of artificers.

In 1842, the number of regiments of artillery was raised to four, amongst which all the artillery was indiscriminately divided.

In 1868, two new regiments were raised, and there were then

3 Regiments of field artillery.

3 Regiments of siege artillery.

In 1874, a fourth regiment of field artillery was raised.

ENGINEERS.

Engineers.

A corps of sappers and miners was organised at Liège in 1830. The following year a battalion of six companies was formed. In 1837, this was increased by two companies. In 1842, the sappers and miners were joined with the Engineers. There was then an engineer regiment of 10 companies; the organisation of 1868 augmented this regiment by 3 special companies. The organisation of 1873 raised the special companies from three to five, and the ordinary companies from ten to twelve.

CONSTITUTION OF THE ARMY.

Constituent parts of the Army.

The army consists of:—

Combatants ..	{	Staff—
		General Staff (<i>état-major général</i>).
		Staff Corps (<i>corps d'état-major</i>).
		Staff of Provinces and Garrisons (<i>état-major des provinces et des places</i>).
Non-combatants	{	Infantry.
		Cavalry.
		Artillery : Train : Ammunition Columns.
		Engineers.
		Administrative Service and Administration Battalion.
		Medical Service.
		Gendarmerie.

STAFF.

1. General Staff.

General Staff.

The General Staff includes all general officers in the section of activity and the section of reserve.

Lieutenant-Generals command divisions, Major-Generals command brigades.

2. Staff Corps.

The Staff Corps directs the whole business of the service, under the orders of officers of the general staff. It has the direction of the geodesical and topographical work, as well as military movements and operations; it supplies aides-de-camp to generals, and professors to the two establishments for superior instruction, viz., the Military School (*L'Ecole Militaire*), and the War School (*Ecole de Guerre*). The commandant of the latter school is a field or general officer who belongs, or has belonged to the Staff Corps, or has obtained the certificate of Staff Assistant (*adjoint d'état-major*).

The staff of the Belgian Army is recruited from officers of the rank of *captain*, who have successfully passed through the course of instruction at the War School, and have been recommended for the service of the staff.

Staff Corps.

All branches of the service may hold staff employment.

The following cannot be appointed staff captains:—

1st. Officers over 35 years of age.

2nd. Officers whose conduct has given cause of complaint after passing the War School.

3rd. Officers of the rank of captain senior to the last officer admitted to the staff, unless they consent to take rank after that officer.

Appointments to the Staff Corps are by seniority and selection in equal proportions. Two lists are kept, and appointments are given alternately to the first of the general and the first of the special list (*vide* p. 128).

Officers of the Staff Corps are bound for a stated period to do duty in their own rank with regiments of Infantry, Cavalry, or Artillery.

This course is not to be less than two years for first captains and captains commandant, and four years for majors, lieutenant-colonels, and colonels.

Formerly this course was not obligatory, and complete latitude was allowed to the War Ministry.

Officers of the Staff Corps detached with regiments are replaced in their duties by assistant (*adjoint*) staff officers of the same or a different rank. These officers then draw the same pay and allowances as officers of the Staff Corps.

If the number of officers of the Staff Corps is at any time insufficient for the requirements of the service, the War Minister may appoint assistant Staff Officers to do duty for the time being. These officers are detached from their regiments during this period.

For further Regulations *see* War School, p. 127—131.

Appointments to the Staff of Provinces and Garrisons are made without any special professional qualification.

The following table shows the composition of the General Staff, the Staff Corps, and Staff of Provinces and Garrisons:—

1. General Staff.

<i>General Staff.</i>							
<i>Section of Activity—</i>							
Lieutenant-Generals	..	..	..	..	..	..	9
Major-Generals	..	..	..	..	..	..	18
							— 27
<i>Section of Reserve—</i>							
Lieutenant-Generals	..	..	..	..	..	..	4
Major-Generals	..	..	..	..	..	..	4
							— 8
						Total	.. .. 35

2. Staff Corps.

<i>Staff Corps.</i>							
Colonels	..	..	..	..	..	..	4
Lieutenant-Colonels	..	..	..	..	..	..	4
Majors	..	..	..	..	..	..	8
Captains	..	{ 1st Class	..	..	..	..	13
	..	{ 2nd Class	..	..	..	..	12
							—
						Total	.. .. 46

Staff of Provinces and Garrisons.										3. Staff of Provinces and Garrisons.	
Staff of Provinces—											
*Major-Generals or Colonels Commandants of Provinces ..										5	5
										—	
Aides-de-Camp (Captains or Lieutenants) to Commandants of Provinces										9†	
Staff of Garrisons—											
Commandants ..		{	1st Class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	5	
			2nd Class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	4	
			3rd Class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	9	
“ Majors de Place”		{	..	..	..	..	..	2	
			1st Class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	9	
“ Adjutants de Place”		{	2nd Class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	8	
			3rd Class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	4	
Military Chaplains .. .. .		..	..	..	..	..	..	—	41
										39	

INFANTRY.

Infantry.

[For detail of peace establishments *see* Appendix I, Table I.]

- 1 Rifle Regiment (Carabiniers).
- 1 Regiment of Grenadiers.
- 3 Regiments of Foot Chasseurs.
- 14 Regiments of the Line.
- 2 Sedentary companies.
- 1 Corps of discipline and correction.
- 1 School for soldiers' children.

The Rifle Regiment has 4 active battalions, 2 non-active battalions, and a dépôt. The other Regiments have each 3 active battalions, 1 non-active battalion, and a dépôt.

All the battalions have 4 companies.

The effective peace strength of a company of Grenadiers or Carabiniers is 4 officers, 114 other ranks. The effective peace strength of a company in other regiments is 4 officers, 91 other ranks.

Estimated effective War strength of a company, 4 officers, 232 non-commissioned officers and men.

The dépôt of each regiment consists of a staff and 1 company.

The peace establishment of a battalion of Grenadiers or Carabiniers is 18 officers and 459 rank and file; of Chasseurs and Line 18 officers and 367 rank and file.

The non-active battalions have only a cadre in time of peace. When the army is placed on a war footing, their ranks would be filled from the 7th, 8th, 9th, and 10th classes of men on furlough.

The Infantry are armed with the Albini rifle, with the exception of the Carabiniers, who have the Terssen rifle (*see* “Small Arms and Ammunition,” page 117).

* These consist in the last Army List (1881) of the Commandants of the Provinces of East Flanders, Liège, and Brabant; the Commandant of the War School; and the Minister of War.

† Aides-de-Camp are reckoned on the effective strength of the corps to which they belong.

Composition
of the cadre of
a company of
Infantry.

Composition of the Cadre of a Company of Infantry.

Each company is commanded by a captain, assisted by 3 lieutenants or sub-lieutenants. The non-commissioned officers are 1 serjeant-major, 1 first serjeant, 1 quartermaster-serjeant, 5 serjeants, and 10 corporals.

The Company is divided into 3 subdivisions (*pelotons*), each peloton into 2 sections, each section into 2 squads. Each squad forms a group in skirmishing.

Non-com-
batant staff of
a regiment.

Non-Combatant Staff of a Regiment.

The non-combatant staff of an infantry regiment consists of:—

- 1 Captain Quartermaster.
- 1 Paymaster.
- 1 Clothing Officer.
- 1 Regimental Surgeon.
- 2 Battalion Surgeons.

Cavalry.

CAVALRY.

[For detail of peace establishments *see* Appendix I, Table II, *Cavalry.*]

- 2 Regiments of Chasseurs.
- 2 Regiments of Guides.
- 4 Regiments of Lancers.

Composition
of Regiments.

Each cavalry regiment has 4 active squadrons and 1 squadron of reinforcement (*renfort*). The squadron has 4 pelotons: 2 or 3 squadrons form a division.

Strength of
squadrons.

Effective peace strength of a squadron, 6 officers, 140 men, 120 troop horses. The number of horses on war strength is increased to 154. On mobilisation the squadron of reinforcement sends drafts composed of its best riders and horses to the 4 active or war (*de guerre*) squadrons, to replace the troopers and horses considered unfit for the field.

Non-com-
batant Staff.

In addition to regimental staff and squadron officers there are:—

- 1 Captain Quartermaster.
- 1 Paymaster.
- 1 Clothing Officer.
- 1 Regimental Surgeon.
- 1 1st Class Veterinary Surgeon.
- 1 2nd „ „ „
- 1 3rd „ „ „

Artillery.

ARTILLERY.

[For detail of peace establishments *see* Appendix I, Table III, *Artillery.*]

Field Regi-
ments.

In addition to a special staff the artillery consists of:

Siege Regi-
ments.

- I. 4 Field Regiments.
- II. 3 Siege „

III. Special Companies, viz :—

- 1 Pontoon Company.
- 1 Company of Artificers.
- 1 Company of Artillery Artisans.
- 1 Company of Armourers.

Special Companies.

The infantry and cavalry ammunition columns are also under control of the artillery. Transport of Ammunition.

I. *Field Regiments.*

The 1st and 3rd Field Regiments (Divisional Regiments) have each 8 Mounted Batteries and 2 Batteries of Reserve, of which 1 serves as a *dépôt*. The 2nd and 4th Field Regiments (Corps Regiments) have each 7 Mounted Batteries, 2 Horse Batteries (the 18th, 19th, 38th, and 39th), and 1 of Reserve, which serves as a *dépôt*. Field Regiments.

This gives 10 Batteries to each Regiment, or 40 Batteries in all (including Reserve Batteries). Two Field Batteries form a division.

The Batteries of the Field Regiments are numbered from 1 to 40. The Batteries have each 6 guns, with 6 horses per gun, except the Reserve Batteries, which, according to present arrangements, are to provide the personnel of the ammunition columns. There is a probability, however, that this service will be shortly relegated to the Train, and the batteries armed.

The effective strength is as follows :—

Horse Battery :	<i>Peace footing</i> , 5 officers, 110 men, 102 horses.	Horse and Mounted Batteries on Peace and War footing.
	<i>War footing</i> , 5 officers, 164 men, 184 horses.	
Mounted Battery :	<i>Peace footing</i> , 5 officers, 89 men, 53 horses.	
	<i>War footing</i> , 5 officers, 150 men, 152 horses.	

The non-combatant staff in each Field Regiment consists of— Non-combatant staff of Field Regiment.

- 1 Captain Quartermaster.
- 1 Paymaster.
- 1 Clothing Officer.
- 1 Regimental Surgeon.
- 1 Battalion „
- 1 1st Class Veterinary Surgeon.
- 1 2nd Class „ „

The carriages of a Field Battery on peace establishment are— Carriages of Field Batteries.

- 6 gun carriages.
- 1 general service wagon (No. 3).

On *War footing*—

- 7 gun carriages.
- 9 ammunition wagons.
- 1 forge wagon.
- 3 general service wagons (Nos. 1, 2, 3).

**Carriages of
Field Bat-
teries.**

Each of these carriages has a team of 6 horses. No spare horses are allowed to the battery, as it is considered that two horses of the general service and forge wagons are available when required.

The whole of the carriages are of wood, made in the "arsenal of construction," at Antwerp; they are fitted for pole draught. In harnessing, the traces of the lead horses attach, not to the centre horses, but to the pole, while those of the centre pair attach, not to the wheelers, but to the splinter bar.

The pipe boxes of the wheels are of bronze; stock of the nave of wood.

The forge wagon is a limbered wagon, carrying a forge with bellows, similar to but smaller than our field forge.

The general service wagons Nos. 1 and 2 are limbered wagons, the body of each being covered with a low arched roof, hinged at the side.

The general service wagon No. 3 is a lock-under wagon, heavier and larger than our Royal Artillery wagon, and fitted with high bale hoops.

**Artillery
Armament.
Horse
Batteries.****ARMAMENT OF HORSE AND FIELD ARTILLERY.**

The Horse batteries* are armed with "canons de 4" (= 9-pr.), steel rifled B.L., Krupp pattern. Range about 4,400 yards; shrapnel, 1,980 yards: case up to 550 yards. Can fire on an average 25 rounds in 11 minutes. The breech is Wahrendorf's slightly altered.

The fuze is a percussion one on the Prussian pattern. No time fuze. The detonator and pin are not screwed in nor fixed till the moment of firing; the operation takes about 15 seconds.

Ammunition.—Shell, shrapnel, and case; the shell breaks into 43 pieces. Weight of gun, with carriage and limber, 3,300 lbs. Limber and axletree boxes carry 50 rounds: wagon, 108. Weight of shell, 9.4 lbs.

**Mounted
Batteries.**

The Mounted Batteries are armed with "canons de 6" (= 15-pr.) and partly with "canons de 4." The "canons de 6" are of similar construction to the "canon de 4." Weight with carriage and limber, 3,850 lbs.

Ammunition.—Shell which bursts into 45 segments, shrapnel and case. Range, 4,620 yards. Shrapnel, 2,200 yards. Limber and axletree boxes carry 38 rounds: wagon, 100.

**Artillery
ammunition.**

The artillery ammunition is divided into three parts:—1st, carried on the gun and carriage; 2nd, in the wagons with battery; 3rd, in the ammunition column.

Its distribution is as follows:—

* The Belgian Artillery is shortly to be armed with more powerful guns made by Krupp. Those for the Mounted Batteries of a calibre of 87 mm., and Horse Batteries of 75 mm., on the Prussian model of 1873, with slight modifications in the vent and pitch of rifling. In 1878 a credit of £132,000 was voted for the purchase of twenty of these batteries.

Horse Artillery and 8 cm. Field Battery—per Battery.

1st.	{	Axle-tree boxes ..	..	..	12
		Limbers ..	..	(48 × 6)	288
2nd.	{	Wagons ..	..	(108 × 9)	972
		Spare gun carriage	..	..	50

Horse
Battery and
8 cm. Field
Battery.

1,322 rounds.

Field Battery—9 centimètres.

1st.	{	Axle-tree boxes ..	..	..	12
		Limbers ..	..	(36 × 6)	216
2nd.	{	Wagons ..	..	(100 × 9)	900
		Spare gun carriage	..	..	38

Field Battery
—9 c.m.

1,166 rounds.

The third part of the ammunition is carried in the ammunition columns (8), which consist altogether of:—

56 ammunition wagons for 8-centimètre guns.

56 " " 9 "

4 gun carriages for 8-centimètre guns.

4 " 9 "

56 × 108 = 6,048 rounds.

4 × 50 = 200 "

6,248 " 8-cm. ammunition,

56 × 100 = 5,600 rounds.

4 × 38 = 152 "

5,752 " 9-cm. ammunition,

II. *Siege Regiments.*

The three Siege Regiments (5th, 6th, and 7th) have 16 Active Siege Regiments. Batteries, 1 of Reserve, and 1 Dépôt. The Siege Batteries are numbered 1 to 48; Nos. 1 to 16 constitute the 7th Regiment of Artillery; 17 to 32 the 5th Regiment; and Nos. 33 to 48 the 6th Regiment. The Dépôt and Siege Reserve Batteries have no numbers.

4 Siege Batteries form a division.

The peace strength of a Siege Battery is 3 officers and 73 men; war strength, 3 officers and 173 men.

In each Siege Regiment the non-combatant staff consists of.—

1 Captain Quartermaster,

1 Paymaster.

1 Clothing Officer.

1 Regimental Surgeon.

2 Battalion Surgeons.

Non-Com-
batant staff.

COMPARISON of Field Guns of the Artillery of Belgium, England, Germany, and France.

Country.	Name.	Calibre.	Initial Velocity.	Shell.		Shrapnel.	Case.	Dangerous zones.	
				Weight.	No. of fragments.			No. of balls.	No. of balls.	1,000 m. (1,100 yards).	2,000 m. (2,200 yards).
Belgium	{ 8 cm. (de 6) 9 cm. steel (de 4)	78 mm.	350 m.	4-277 kilos.	43	64	61	38-0 m.	12-70 m.
		91 mm.	372 m.	6-814 kilos.	45	95	115	36-4 m.	14-20 m.
New Krupp Guns ..	{ 7 cm. 8 cm.	75 mm.	465 m.	4-300 kilos.	100	108	..	49-0 m.	18-0 m.
		87 mm.	465 m.	6-800 kilos.	135	195	..	49-0 m.	18-0 m.
England	{ 9-pr. | steel 12-pr. | muzzle 16-pr. | loaders	76 mm.	322 m.	3-93 kilos.	..	63	36		
		76 mm.	357 m.	5-0 kilos.	..	..	48		
		91 mm.	412 m.	7-262 kilos.	..	119	60		
Germany.. ..	{ 7-8 cm. 8-8 cm.	78 mm.	465 m.	5-700 kilos.	..	122	76	61-0 m.	180 m.
		88 mm.	444 m.	7-000 kilos.	..	209	76 zinc	55-0 m.	17-0 m.
France	{ 8-0 cm. 9-0 cm. } steel 9-5 cm. }	80 cm.	455 m.	5-50 kilos.	..	..	..	..	..
		9-0 cm.	"	8-00 kilos.	..	..	..	..	..
		9-5 cm.	"	10-900 kilos.	..	..	..	..	..
cm. = centimètres.			m. = mètres.	mm. = millimètres.		kilos. = kilogrammes.			

ARMAMENT OF SIEGE ARTILLERY.

Artillery
Armament.
Siege
Artillery.

The rifled guns adopted for the Siege Artillery (that is for siege or garrison service) are of the following calibres: 9-, 12-, 15-, 21-, 24-, 28-cm., and 21-cm. rifled howitzer.

The 9-cm. siege gun is the same as for field service, mounted on the same travelling carriage. The 12-cm. and 15-cm. guns on the Wahrendorf system, are mounted on travelling and on standing carriages.

The heavy artillery in use consists of "canon de 12" and "canon de 24." There are two kinds of "canon de 12" in steel and cast-iron, and "Canon de 24" in cast-iron and bronze. These guns are mounted on the fortifications, or would form the siege train. They are breechloading, on the Wahrendorf system, and fire lead-coated projectiles.

In the working of guns of position the Belgians require 1 gunner and 3 infantry of Garde Civique to each relief.

Number of guns mounted in 1870:—

Antwerp	..	..	..	..	4,140
Termonde	..	..	..	..	300
Diest	..	..	..	..	250
Liège	..	..	..	..	80
Namur	..	..	..	..	110
					<hr/>
					4,880

$4,880 \times 4 \times 3$ (for 3 reliefs) = 58,560, or 14,640 gunners, and 43,920 infantry or Garde Civique would be required to work the guns in case of the forts being placed in a state of defence.

The gunners in the foot artillery are armed with the grenadier sword. The gunners and drivers in the mounted artillery with the light cavalry sword.

III. *Special Companies.*

The Pontoon Company numbers 6 officers and 137 men, and is a portion of the artillery.

1. Pontoon
Company.

Composition of the Bridge Train.

Bridge train.

Drays forming shore bays	..	..	..	2
Drays carrying trestles and small boats	..	..	..	2
Drays carrying trestles.	..	..	..	6
Drays carrying boats	..	..	..	12
Spare dray	..	..	..	1
Battery wagon	..	..	..	1
Field forge	..	..	..	1
				<hr/>
Total carriages	..	..	..	25

This equipment would make a bridge 126 metres (138 yards) composed of 21 bays, each 6.56 yards long.

Bridge train. Each dray with trestle carries the following stores:—

9 balks,
 20 chesses,
 1 complete trestle,
 2 beds (saddles),
 2 stanchions for rails,
 1 cable,
 10 lashings for fastening the balks,
 10 " " chesses,
 10 wedges,
 1 shovel,
 1 pickaxe,
 1 common pail,
 1 pail for grease on a line.

One non-commissioned officer and 8 pontoniers are in charge of this carriage.

The drays with the boats each carry the following stores:—

1 boat (pontoon),
 7 balks,
 20 chesses,
 1 anchor,
 1 cable for do.,
 10 lashings for chesses,
 10 wedges,
 5 oars,
 5 rowlocks,
 3 boat hooks,
 3 cables,
 15 lashings for balks,
 1 shovel,
 1 pickaxe,
 1 common pail,
 1 grease pail on a line.

One non-commissioned officer and 16 pontoniers are in charge of the carriage.

2.

2. Company
of Artificers.

The company of artificers numbers 4 officers and 102 men.

3.

3. Artillery
Artisans.

Artillery artisans: 4 officers, 175 men.

4.

4. Armourers.

Armourers: 4 officers, 130 men.

THE TRAIN.

Battalion
of the
Train.

The Battalion of the Train consists of a Staff and 7 companies:—4 companies for Pontoon carriages, Engineer Equipment, and Parks; 2 companies for carriages of Commissariat and Ambulances, and 1 Depot Company.

The Artillery and Engineer companies number 3 officers, with 4 chargers; 46 men with 6 saddle and 30 draught horses. Administration (Commissariat and Ambulance) companies have 3 officers, 4 chargers, 85 men, 14 saddle and 49 draught horses.

Artillery and Engineer companies. Administration companies.

The Dépôt Company has 3 officers, 4 chargers, 16 men, and 10 saddle horses.

The Train forms part of the artillery, and is accounted for under that head in the Army Estimates. On mobilisation the reserve and furlough men of the cavalry in excess of any required for their own arm are sent to this branch as drivers.

INFANTRY AND CAVALRY AMMUNITION TRANSPORT.

Infantry ammunition.

The ammunition for cavalry and infantry is carried in wagons, one of which is allowed to each regiment or battalion. Each wagon conveys 20,000 cartridges. The wagons are provided with 12 bags, to be used in distributing the ammunition to the companies. They are made of sail cloth, and open in the middle; the ends are wallet shaped, and hold 18 packets each. The sacks are closed by twisting them in the middle.

The Infantry soldier has with him 60 rounds. The first reserve is carried in the ammunition wagon attached to each battalion—22 rounds.

Number of rounds per man.

The second reserve is in the Infantry and Artillery ammunition column—69 (Rifles 79). Total 151 for Infantry, 161 for Rifles.

Infantry and Artillery Ammunition Columns.

A Division in the Belgian Army consists of—

- 2 Brigades Infantry (6 battalions each) 12 battalions,
- 1 Battalion Carabiniers,
- 4 Squadrons Cavalry,
- 1 Company Engineers,
- 4 Field batteries,
- 1 Detachment of Gendarmerie,
- 1 Ambulance column,
- 1 Ammunition column of Infantry,
- 1 " " Artillery,
- 1 Commissariat column.

The whole of the carriages of a Division are formed into three columns, each under the command of a mounted officer.

The Infantry ammunition column consists of 23 carriages, with 6 horses each, viz. :—

Infantry ammunition column.

- 20 Ammunition wagons for Infantry,
- 1 Ammunition wagon for Cavalry,
- 1 G.S. wagon (4 horses only),
- 1 Forge wagon.

**Infantry
ammunition
column.**

The personnel of an Infantry ammunition column consists of:—

- 1 Captain,
- 1 Lieutenant or sub-lieutenant,
- 6 N.C.O's. of the Train,
- 2 „ Infantry,
- 4 “Brigadiers” of the Train,
- 1 “Brigadiers” of Artillery,
- 2 Trumpeters,
- 1 Saddler,
- 2 Farriers or shoeing smiths,
- 12 Artillerymen,
- 21 Infantry soldiers,
- 82 Drivers (1 for 2 draught horses and one-sixth in reserve),
- 153 Horses.

**Artillery
ammunition
column.**

The artillery ammunition column consists of 18 carriages, of which 16 have 6 horses and two have 4 horses, viz.:—

- 14 Ammunition wagons,
- 1 Spare carriage,
- 1 Store wagon,
- 1 G.S. wagon,
- 1 Forge wagon.

The personnel of an artillery ammunition column consists of—

- 1 Captain,
- 2 Lieutenants or sub-lieutenants,
- 9 N.C.O's. of artillery,
- 3 Mounted “brigadiers” (artillery corporals),
- 3 “Brigadiers” on foot,
- 2 Trumpeters,
- 4 Artisans,
- 2 Farriers or shoeing smiths,
- 24 Gunners,
- 63 Drivers,
- 122 Horses.

On war footing there is 1 Infantry and 1 Artillery ammunition column per Division ; and 2 of each in addition per army corps. (*See page 85.*)

The column receives its supply of ammunition from the park of the army. The officer in command takes his orders from the director of the park, but keeps up constant communication with the commandant of the Division to which he belongs.

The ammunition column always follows the Division to which it is attached. When the Division prepares to come into action, the officer in command of the column selects a spot where he can shelter his carriages from view, and protect them as much as possible from the enemy's fire. The position should be such that from it the line of battle can be easily reached. If the

whole of the carriages cannot be concealed, those that are not required should be sent further to the rear. When the Division is split up into two brigades, the ammunition column is similarly divided, the captain commanding one portion, the lieutenant or sub-lieutenant the other. If a regiment is sent on detached duty, the officer in command of the ammunition column sends the necessary carriages with it, and appoints an officer or non-commissioned officer to take charge of them. The ammunition wagon of the cavalry and the forge always go with the cavalry when it is detached from the division.

Field Parks.

Field park
in 1870.

During the mobilisation of 1870 the park proper was divided into two parts, one for cavalry and infantry ammunition columns and field parks (3) for the Army of Observation, the other for the moveable Division at Antwerp. It was composed as follows:—

	Army of Observation.		Division at Antwerp.	
	Sub-div. A.	Sub-div. B.	Sub-div. A.	Sub-div. B.
Infantry ammunition wagons ..	68	67	18	18
Cavalry do. containing smoothbore ..				
Lancer pistol ammunition ..	2	..	..	..
Artillery ammunition wagons, guns ..				
of "4" rifled	25	23	..	..
Artillery ammunition wagons, guns ..				
of "6" rifled	10	10	4	4
Gun-carriages, Reserve of "4" ..	3	3	..	..
" " "6" ..	1	1	1	..
Battery wagons of "4" No. 1 ..	2	2	..	..
" " "6" No. 1 ..	1	..	1	..
" " " " No. 2 ..	1	1	..	..
Field forges	3	2	1	..
	114	109	25	22
	223		47	

All carriages of sub-division A are constructed for four horses each; they follow the movements of the Army Corps or Division. Those in Sub-division B remain at Antwerp loaded and ready to be sent to the front to replace those of Sub-division A when they are empty.

Sub-division A of the Park of the Army of Observation was divided into five distinct parts or sections; each section was composed of 22 or 23 carriages, as shown below.

Cavalry and Infantry Ammunition Column and Field Parks (4).

Ammunition
Columns in
1870.

ARMY of Observation. Sub-division A.

	Sec. 1.	Sec. 2.	Sec. 3.	Sec. 4.	Sec. 5.
Ammunition wagons, Infantry	22	23	23	..	..
" " Cavalry .. ..	..	..	..	1	1
" " Artillery "4" .. ..	..	..	..	12	11
" " "6" .. ..	..	..	..	5	5
" " Artillery Reserve "4" .. ..	..	..	..	2	1
" " "6" .. ..	..	..	..	..	1
Battery wagons No. 1, "4" .. ..	..	..	..	2	..
" No. 1, "6" .. ..	..	..	..	..	1
" No. 2 .. ..	..	..	..	..	1
Field forges	1	..	..	1	1
Total	23	23	23	23	22

The 6th section of the Park belonging to Sub-division A of the Antwerp Division is not divided as above.

The 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and 5th sections are united, and follow the Army of Observation at a distance of from 12 to 15 miles. The section of the Park belonging to the Antwerp Division does not leave Antwerp if the Division moves more than 15 miles from the intrenched camp.

Each section, besides a detachment of artisans and artificers, has:—

Officers.—1 commandant (lieutenant), 1 sub-lieutenant with 2 or 4 horses.

Non-Commissioned Officers and Men.—1 quartermaster, 1 quartermaster-serjeant, 2 corporals, 22 or 25 gunners (1 per carriage), 1 farrier, 1 trumpeter, 46 to 52 drivers (2 per carriage and 2 in reserve), 88 to 100 draught horses (4 per carriage), and as many troop and saddle horses as there are mounted men, non-commissioned officers, corporals, and trumpeters.

The above are placed under the command of a director-general and sub-directors of the park.

When an action is likely to be fought one section of the park with infantry ammunition wagons and one with artillery ammunition wagons, move forward according to the orders which the director receives from the officer commanding each Army Corps, and take up a position about 3,300 or 4,400 yards in rear of the line; the exact position is pointed out by the Commandant of the Artillery of the Army Corps. It should be made known to the officers who are in charge of ammunition columns, and to officers in command of batteries.

The sections of the park replace carriages of batteries or ammunition columns when empty.

All empty carriages belonging to the sections of the park are sent to the rear and are there unyoked. The men in charge of these carriages yoke other full carriages at once, and rejoin

their party or remain with the park. The empty carriages are afterwards sent to Antwerp by the shortest and quickest routes, and full ones of the same size and number are sent to replace them by the same route.

Engineers.

- | | |
|---|---------------------------------|
| I. Special staff. | Engineers.
1. Special staff. |
| II. A regiment of 3 battalions of 4 companies, and 1 dépôt company. The companies have each 2 pelotons, and are numbered 1 to 12. | 2. Engineer Regiment. |
| III. Five special companies, viz. :— | 3. Special Companies. |
| 1 railway company. | |
| 1 fortress (<i>de place</i>) telegraph company. | |
| 1 field telegraph company. | |
| 1 fortress pontoon company. | |
| 1 company artisans. | |

The non-combatant staff of a regiment consists of :—

- 1 Captain Quartermaster.
- 1 Paymaster.
- 1 Clothing Officer (a captain).
- 1 Regimental Surgeon.
- 2 Battalion Surgeons.

Non-combatant staff.

RAILWAY COMPANY.

Railway company.

Course of Instruction of Engine Drivers.

The Engineer regiment detaches 8 men every 4 months for the purpose of being instructed in railway duties by the "Administration des Chemins-de-fer de l'Etat."

For the first four months the men are employed in the shops at Malines in the repair of engines and their tenders. Those who show an aptitude as engineers are then distributed amongst the various stations to be employed for another 4 months as stokers.

On the expiration of this second period those who pass a satisfactory examination are appointed station engineers. After this if their conduct has been good, they perform the duties of road engineers (engine driver) for another four months.

Soldiers employed as machinists or stokers are, in all that concerns the railway work, under the command of their immediate chief. Under all other circumstances they obey the military authorities. They are attached to regiments or corps for subsistence, but are not obliged to live in barracks; they draw their pay and allowances as in ordinary cases.

Whilst employed at Malines for the first four months they are given (90 cents.) about 9*d.* a day extra pay by the Public Works Department.

When employed as stoker or engineer they receive an extra

allowance equal to the half of that given to the "employés" of the State railways, viz. :—

£1 12s. 6d per month for stokers.

£2 4s. 2d. per month for station-engineers.

£2 12s. 6d. per month for road-engineers (drivers).

On the expiration of the 16th month the soldiers who thoroughly understand the duties of engine driver return to their regiment.

In this manner 32 men are always attached to the "Administration des Chemins-de-fer de l'Etat."

Telegraph
companies.

TELEGRAPH COMPANIES.

The Telegraph Companies are organised on the basis of being able to work four principal offices and four smaller ones (*volants*). They have a special cadre. There are at present two telegraph companies, one for fortress, the other for field work.

The telegraphists are selected as far as possible from telegraph "employés" drawn for service.

The field company carries its equipment in—

4 post carriages.

4 telegraph cable carriages.

6 carriages for wire.

1 carriage as workshop.

—
Total.. 15 carriages.

The length of cable carried is 12 miles, and of wire 12 miles.

The wire carried weighs from 140 to 150 kilos. (308 to 330 lbs. English).

Seven men are required to lay a cable line, and 12 for a wire line, without counting non-commissioned officers.

CHAPTER V.

ACTIVE ARMY (NON-COMBATANTS).

I. Intendance and Administration Battalion—II. Medical Service—
III. Gendarmerie.

I. INTENDANCE AND ADMINISTRATION BATTALION.

THE personnel of the administrative services consists of:—

The Intendants.

The Accountants (*officers comptables*) and Paymasters
(*officers payeurs*).

The Administration Battalion.

INTENDANCE.

Duties of the
Intendants. ;

The duty of the Intendants is to direct and verify the accounts kept by the paymasters of corps. The administrative control of the Intendants extends in addition to the hospitals, bakeries, military slaughter-houses (*boucheries*) and supply of forage.

The Intendance has nothing to do with military stores, barracks, barrack stores, or fuel and light in time of peace. Its functions are to provide bread and meat, forage, cloth, leather, &c., and it has also to supervise all transport required for these purposes in the field. It further supplies money, and keeps the cash account, and the commanding officers of the administration battalions are taken from its ranks.

Generals commanding the military districts and provinces, as well as generals commanding Divisions and Brigades of all arms, are authorised to visit when they shall see fit the establishments at their station, to make sure that the provisions and forage are of good quality. They communicate to the Sub-intendant the observations they may have to make on the subject, and bring these remarks to the notice of the Minister of War if necessary. Inspections
by General
Officers.

An Intendant of the 1st or 2nd class directs the administration of each of the nine provinces, except Luxembourg. This official inspects once a week, at hours fixed by himself, all the subsistence establishments within the radius of his district. Inspection by
Intendants.

The Ministerial explanatory circular attached to the Royal Warrant of 15th August, 1876, regulates in a detailed manner the duties of functionaries of the Intendance as regards provision of subsistence for the army. Under the authority of this circular the Intendants in charge of service of subsistence control the working of the bakeries, slaughter-houses, and forage magazines in the district (*circonscription*) assigned to them, and correspond directly with the Minister of War in all matters referring to the service.

The above regulations lay down with great minuteness the precautions necessary for the health of men and horses in *peace time*; but there is an almost complete want of arrangement for the intendance in time of war.

The Administrative Service is divided into two portions—*Pay* and *Supply*. These two divisions are distinct, both, however, being under the control of the Intendant-in-Chief of the Army. Administra-
tive Service.

The Administrative Service also includes the Captain Quartermaster of each regiment, who performs a portion of the duties which in our service fall to the Paymaster and Quartermaster. This functionary is partly under the Intendant, partly under the colonel of the regiment, wearing regimental uniform with silver in place of gilt buttons. Captain
Quartermaster.

The Belgian regiment being composed of three (and in case of the Rifles four) battalions, this officer performs duties similar to those of a Brigade Commissary in the English Army,

Captain
Quartermaster.

in addition to dealing with the sums of money granted for coals, light, brooms, and cleaning utensils, and keeping the accounts of the men's messing and clothing funds.

A money allowance for fuel, light, and cleaning utensils, fixed at each station by the average price of the preceding year, is granted to each regiment, all purchases of these articles being made regimentally by a regimental committee.

Appointment to rank of Sub-Intendant, 2nd Class.

The appointments of Sub-Intendant of the 2nd class are made after examination as follows:—

One half of the vacancies to the Captain Quartermasters;
One half to Captains of all arms of the service.

The administrative officers of regiments are thus allowed to compete with the captains of all arms, but as the limit of age is 40 years, practically speaking none of them gain admittance to the Intendance.

Composition of corps of Intendance.

Composition of the corps of Intendants, and personnel of Paymasters is as follows:—

Intendants.	Relative Rank.	Number.
Intendant-in-Chief. . . .	Major-General	1
Intendants { 1st Class	Colonel	3
{ 2nd Class	Lieutenant-Colonel	6
Sub-Intendants { 1st Class	Major	12
{ 2nd Class	Captain	13
	Total	35

Paymasters.

Grade.	Number.
Captain Quartermasters	38
Lieutenant Paymasters	37
Sub-Lieutenant Paymasters	38
Clothing Officers	37
Total	150

ADMINISTRATION BATTALION.

Administration Battalion.

The Battalion of Administration includes the butchers, bakers, and a certain number of labourers; it has under its charge the various sanitary and administrative establishments, viz. :—

Hospitals and Central Dispensary at Antwerp.
Bakeries.
Slaughter-houses.
Forage stores, &c.

It comprises a staff and 8 companies, each divided into 4 sections:—

1. Hospitals,
2. Bakeries,
3. Slaughter-houses.
4. Forage,

Administra-
tion Bat-
talion.

and allotted to the provinces similarly to the "Directions" of Administration, with the exception of the 6th Company, which is at the camp at Beverloo.

A field officer has the direction of the duties of the battalion. He has under his orders—

74 Officers of administration, divided into four classes,
60 Clerks, 1st and 2nd Class,
760 Subordinate employés.

ESTABLISHMENT OF ADMINISTRATION BATTALION.

	War Establishment.			Peace Establishment.		
	Officers.	N.C.O's. and Men.	Total.	Officers.	N.C.O's. and Men.	Total.
Hospitals..	20	258	278
Bakeries	20	170	190
Butcheries	12	96	108
Forage Stores	18	220	238
Total..	70	744	814
Battalion { Clerks	60	60
{ Staff	4	16	20
8 Companies	70	744	814
Total..	74	820	894

The superior officers are the Intendants, the subordinate officers are the officers of the Administration Battalion.

The men are drilled only slightly. They are armed with a short sword, and are permitted to wear plain clothes at the discretion of the Intendant.

Supply.

Except in some few unimportant places, there are no contractors for supplies, which are procured more cheaply by direct purchase. It is considered also that by this means the officers of the Intendance are trained in peace time for the duties they would have to perform in war.

Rations of all kinds, bread, meat, and fuel, are drawn from the divisional stores by regiments, the demand being signed by the commanding officer. Rations how
drawn.

The check on number of rations drawn is by the Pay branch of the Intendance, which musters all men and horses monthly.

Bakeries.*Bakeries.*

Rations of bread are provided for the troops either by Government establishments (*de la régie*), or occasionally by contractors, who have entered into contracts advertised for public competition.

The personnel of these establishments forms part of the Administration Battalion.

Military bakeries are established in the principal towns of the country: they furnish bread to the troops stationed in those towns, and in the neighbouring garrisons not having bakery establishments.

Bread ration. The ration of bread is 1·66 lbs., and the average of the five years ending 1875 showed the following result:—

Price of bread ration at military bakeries, 19·19 centimes.

„ „ by contractors, 22·36 „

Supply of wheat at Antwerp.

The defence of Belgium being based on Antwerp, the Government has established a system by which six months' supply of wheat for 100,000 men is there kept in store. The wheat is ground in steam mills at Antwerp, under bomb-proof cover. The flour is issued from these mills once a month to the Intendants of Administrative (Provincial) Districts, the supply being kept up by fresh purchases of wheat.

Slaughter-Houses.

Meat ration and Military Slaughter-houses.

The meat ration in the Belgian Army is 300 grammes (·66 lb.).

Military slaughter-houses are established in the larger garrison towns. They provide the meat for the troops occupying those towns, and exceptionally for the troops of the neighbouring garrisons, when the tenders by contractors are not accepted.

The average price of the ration in the five years ending 1875 was as follows (the ration being during that period ·55 lb.):—

Price as issued from military slaughter-houses, 28·95 centimes.

Price by contractors 26·60 „

The beasts for military slaughter-houses are bought in the open market weekly. Meat is issued daily in summer, every two days in autumn and spring, and every three days in winter.

Supply of preserved meat at Antwerp.

At Antwerp 15 days' supply of preserved meat is always kept in store, and is issued one day's supply per week to the troops; the quantity being kept up by fresh purchases.

Forage.

Forage.

A similar system is followed for the supply of forage.

Oats and hay are purchased in bulk, the hay for troop horses being made up in bundles of a ration for two days, in the store.

Forage ration.

Following table shows average price of forage rations from 1871 to 1875:—

						Average price of ration of 10 kilos. (22 lbs.)
Oats	..	..	..	..	..	2.20 francs.
Hay	..	..	..	..	..	1.03 „
Straw	..	..	..	..	..	.63 „

II. MEDICAL SERVICE.

The Medical Service (*service de santé*) in the field is a distinct Medical service under the direct authority of the military executive, and Corps. under the financial control of the Intendance.

The Medical Service of the Army in the Field is carried out Corps of by the Corps of Military Surgeons. Military Surgeons.

The Medical Corps consists of surgeons (*médecins*), dispensers (*pharmaciens*), and veterinary surgeons of the army.

The medical officers are detailed to the various corps and hospitals. The hospitals at Antwerp, Brussels, Ghent, and Liège are under the direction of principal surgeons of the first class; those of Bruges, Louvain, Malines, Mons, Namur and Tournay, by principal surgeons of the second class; and those of Arlon, Beverloo Camp, Diest, Ostende, Termonde, and Ypres, by the senior surgeon in the garrison. The number of medical officers for hospital service is, 13 superior officers (including the Inspector-General) and 20 assistant surgeons. The number of Regimental and Battalion Surgeons is 115.

The Central Dispensary, at Antwerp, is under the direction Dispensary at of a Principal Dispenser, assisted by several military dispensers. Antwerp. The establishment of the pharmaceutical service is 37 medical officers.

The General Inspection, which is established at Brussels, General comprises besides the Inspector-General, a medical officer of Inspection. superior rank, and one or two medical officers as assistants; a Dispenser of 1st or 2nd Class; and the Inspecting Veterinary Surgeon.

The Veterinary Service is controlled by the Inspecting Veterinary Veterinary Surgeon, under the orders of the Inspector-General Veterinary Service. of the Medical Service, and consists of a corps of Veterinary Surgeons, 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Class, 34 in all.

The Hospitals, as well as the Dispensaries, are under the Hospitals authority of the Inspector-General of the Sanitary Service in all and Dis- that refers to the personnel and medical service. For adminis- pensaries. trative services, they are under the military Intendants.

Hospitals and military infirmaries are established in the Hospitals and principal garrison towns. military Infirmaries.

The administrative staff of these establishments is supplied by the Administration Battalion (Hospital Section). Nursing sisters look after the sick in the hospitals at Brussels, Antwerp, Liège, and Ghent.

In garrisons of which the strength is not sufficient to require the establishment of a hospital or military infirmary, sick sub-officers and soldiers are treated in the civil hospitals, at the expense of the War Department.

**Central
Dispensary at
Antwerp.**

The Central Dispensary at Antwerp is the general dépôt of the medical stores, bandages, surgical instruments, &c., required for the sanitary and veterinary services of the army.

The medical stores, and other articles for the Central Dispensary, are supplied by contractors, tenders being publicly made and accepted every year.

**Insufficiency
of medical
service.**

The experience of putting the army on a war footing in 1870 showed the insufficiency of the personnel of the medical service. This insufficiency always exists in time of peace, for in certain garrisons, the medical attendance is supplied by civilian doctors.

Ambulances.

Ambulances are only organised when the army is placed on a war footing. The personnel is furnished by the Administration Battalion (Hospital Section), which is then augmented by the calling up under arms of hospital attendants belonging to those classes of the "milice" which are on unlimited furlough.

In 1870 the organisation of ambulances encountered serious difficulties, resulting not only from insufficiency of the personnel, but also from an almost complete absence of matériel. Since that time the cadres of the medical service have been increased, as also those of the personnel of "pharmaciens."

Ambulances which are always difficult to organise in a country deprived of the inexhaustible source of technical personnel which obligatory service furnishes, have also been constituted on a fresh base, on the model of similar institutions in Germany. The Ministerial circular of 12th January, 1871, established a class of sick or stretcher bearers in regiments: the number of these stretcher bearers has been fixed at two per company. The instruction given to them includes the manner of taking up the wounded, the management of stretchers, the application of light (temporary) dressings, and their employment in the elements of surgery. The "matériel" includes the sick cart, model 1870; the light two-wheeled cart, model 1872, for the carriage of the wounded; and the larger wagons, with four wheels, model 1868. This matériel is excellent, as is also the ambulance knapsack, adopted in 1872.

**Field
Hospitals.**

The organisation of field or temporary hospitals, and of services for removing the wounded and sick in time of war, is not yet settled. Other services are also to be created, and more especially a service for the line of communications in the field.

It is in contemplation to constitute a hospital service for the field, without relying on the chance assistance of volunteer attendants whom zeal may bring on to the field.

**Medical
regulations.**

The regulations for the medical service of the army in peace are minute as regards hygiene and cleanliness. The observance of these regulations devolves, in barracks, on regimental surgeons, and in the hospitals on the principal surgeons, assisted by the Intendants in charge (*Directeurs*).

Owing to the unceasing care of these various authorities, the sanitary state of the Belgian Army is satisfactory; and it may be stated that a good number of "miliciens" who come to the

regiments with serious affections, return home cured after their legal term of service has expired; but the death rate in the Belgian Army is still high.

In Belgium all military surgeons are allowed to engage in civil practice.

The King, by decree of 1st August, 1877, approved of the new hospital regulations being put in force. These regulations introduce the necessary improvements for time of peace, and simplify the accounts of military hospitals; they are a continuation of the reforms which the Intendance is now engaged in effecting. It is therefore hoped that the progress made up to the present will be continued, and that the administration will shortly determine the bases of the organisation of the Commissariat and Hospital Service in time of war.

Medical
Regulations,
August, 1877.

The regulation of 1st August, 1877, contains the following chapters:—

- 1st. Organisation of the service.
- 2nd. Matériel.
- 3rd. Moving the sick.
- 4th. Interior service.
- 5th. Diet.
- 6th. Accounts.
- 7th. Incidental services (*services accessoires*).
- 8th. General dispositions.

An appendix gives a résumé of the arrangements made between the War Department and nursing sisters of the Order of Saint Augustin: the administrative personnel of permanent military hospitals *in time of peace*: a descriptive notice of the cots and bedding, of the dress and linen in use in military hospitals; an instruction concerning the service of general transport in time of war; instructions on the treatment of itch and the disinfection of clothes; the (food) regimen of military hospitals, and the regulations for the libraries in these establishments.

Medical Transport.

The number of ambulance carriages is insufficient, and carts or wagons for transport of provisions do not exist. In 1870 it was found useless to trust to the transport obtained by requisition from the communes, because the country conveyances are not by their construction fitted for the conveyance of the stores of various kinds, and it was found that the requisitioned transport did not move with the order and rapidity necessary for military operations.

The Hospital Department of Army of Observation was, during the mobilisation of 1870 composed as follows:—

Field
Hospitals in
1870.

Carriages.	Ambulance Wagons or Carriages on Springs.	Ambulance Carriages on 2 wheels.	Wagons or Carriages for Medical Stores.	Cacolets.
General Headquarters	2	..	1	
Headquarters Army of Observation	2	..	2	
1st Army Corps—				
Headquarters	10	..	2	
1st Division	10	6	2	4
2nd "	10	6	2	4
3rd "	10	6	2	4
IInd Army Corps—				
Headquarters .. ..	..	..	2	
4th Division (Infantry Reserve)	10	5	2	4
Division in Intrenched Camp (Antwerp) ..	5	..	2	4
Cavalry Reserve	5	4	2	..
Artillery "	4	..	2	..
Total ..	58	27	21	20

III. GENDARMERIE.

Mission and
organisation
of the Gen-
darmerie.

The duty of the Gendarmerie is to insure the maintenance of order in the country, and the execution of the laws.

Since 1874 it has had also intrusted to it the duty of taking an active part in the operation for the recall of the "miliciens," &c., for the mobilisation (*see* Mobilisation, page 77) of the army.

The corps is recruited partly from the army and partly from the civil population.

The Corps of Gendarmerie, under the command of a colonel or general, receives its orders from the War Ministry in all matters concerning the personnel, matériel, and discipline of the corps, and from the Ministry of Justice in matters concerning police and the maintenance of order. There are three divisions of Gendarmerie:—

1st division, Headquarters at Brussels, includes the provinces of Brabant, Hainault, and Namur.

2nd division, Headquarters at Ghent, includes the provinces of Antwerp, and East and West Flanders.

3rd division, Headquarters at Liège, includes the provinces of Liège, Luxembourg, and Limbourg.

Each division is composed of three companies, commanded by a major; each company is commanded by a captain, and is designated by the name of the province to which it belongs.

The companies are subdivided into lieutenancies corresponding to one or more judicial districts (*arrondissements judiciaires*), brigades, and detached posts. For the duties con-

nected with the supervision and recall of the "miliciens" and the mobilisation of the army, the lieutenancies and brigades are designated by the respective denominations of "districts" and "military cantons."

Organisation
of the
Gendarmerie.

The budget of the Gendarmerie for the year 1881 is based on an effective strength of 1,965 men and 1,345 horses. On 30th January, 1880, the number of officers was as follows:—

Colonel	..	..	..	..	1
Lieutenant-colonel	..	..	..	..	1
Majors	..	..	..	..	3
Captains	..	..	..	..	10
Lieutenants	..	..	..	..	12
Sub-Lieutenants	..	..	..	..	22
					—
Total	..	..	..	..	49

CHAPTER VI.

THE CIVIC GUARD.

THE "Garde Civique" may be termed the constitutional force of Belgium. Unlike our Volunteers the "Gardes Civiques" perform compulsory service.

Garde
Civique.

According to the existing law every Belgian or foreigner resident in Belgium (unless under police surveillance) between the ages of 21 and 50, is bound to serve in the "Garde Civique," persons belonging to the army and those specially exempted, being the only exceptions.

The Civic Guard in time of peace is under the control of the Minister of the Interior. In time of war the mobilised Civic Guard (the organisation of which is then subject to a special law) is placed under the Minister of War, and receives pay, rations, &c., in the same way as the regular army.

The Guard is organised by "communes," and is charged with the maintenance of order, the observance of the laws, the preservation of the national independence, and the integrity of the territory.

It is divided into—

- I. *The Active Guard*, in "communes" having an aggregate population of over 10,000; and in fortified towns, or towns commanded by a fortress.
- II. *The Non-active Guard* in other communes.

Garde
Civique.

The King can disband or suspend from duty all or part of the Civic Guard for any period not exceeding six months.

I. Active
Guard.

I. The *Active Guard* is divided into two categories:—

(1.) Ordinary Service,

(2.) Reserve Service.

The former consists of all men able to clothe themselves and who perform the usual duties. The latter, of those men who are unable to clothe themselves, but who when required are equipped by Government at the expense of the commune to which they belong.

The Active Guard is organised into legions, battalions, and companies. In certain places special sections of Artillery, troops of Cavalry, Chasseurs, and Sapeurs-pompier have been formed.

In towns where there are several legions, there is a commandant and staff. The whole Civic Guard of the kingdom is under the orders of an Inspector-General, assisted by a staff of five officers.

All appointments up to the rank of captain, except that of serjeant-major, are elective by the company. The serjeant-major is nominated by the captain of the company. Those who are elected must pass a certain qualifying examination.

The officers of the battalion elect the major and battalion surgeons.

The officers of the legion elect the surgeon and ensign (*lieutenant porte drapeau*).

The chief of the legion nominates the "adjutant-sous-officier," the drum major, and battalion drum major.

The King appoints the Inspector-General, the Commandants, and their respective staffs.

The King also selects the colonels, lieutenant-colonels, adjutants, majors, quartermasters, and recorders (*greffiers*), from a triple set of candidates chosen by the officers of the corps.

Service in the Active Guard is personal and obligatory, and in general consists in mounting guard, and finding the patrols necessary for the maintenance of good order. When the regular troops are temporarily absent from a garrison, the Guard replaces them. While so employed they are under the orders of the "commandant de place," and are provided by the State with quarters, fuel, light, and furniture.

In fortified towns the Guard must give notice to the Commandant of its wish to assemble, and the burgomaster has the power of calling it out in aid of the civil power in its own commune; but except in urgent cases the Guard cannot be called upon to serve outside its own district unless by the order of the Governor of the Province, or "Commissaire d'Arrondissement."

The Active Guard may not be assembled for drill more than eight times during the year, the duration of each drill being, at the outside, two hours.

In addition, there may be two annual reviews, and quarterly inspections of arms and equipment.

Under arms, the duties are similar to those of the army.

The disciplinary powers of the officers are limited to reprimands, extra duty, guards, &c., arrest, and fines. Serious offences are brought before court-martial (*conseil de discipline*).

The uniform of the Garde Civique is determined by Royal Decree, but the price must not exceed 50 francs (£2). Arms, equipment, drums, trumpets, and bugles are furnished by and belong to the State. Ammunition, when required, is supplied by the War Department.

The communes are bound to provide magazines and store-houses, which they must keep in repair.

Every individual "garde" is responsible for the state of his arms and equipment.

The Infantry are armed with the old muzzle-loading rifle converted, with bayonet, pouch, and waist-belt. The non-commissioned officers generally, and the Civic Guard of Brussels, carry the sword bayonet (*sabre briquet*).

The special corps are armed with the Comblain rifle, fitted with sword bayonet (*couteau de chasse*).

The cavalry carry a pistol and sabre.

The ordinary expenses of the Civic Guard are defrayed by the "commune," but the special corps have private funds for the maintenance of bands, &c.

Special corps of Cavalry, Artillery, Firemen, and Chasseurs, are formed in certain localities, with the permission of the Minister of the Interior. They consist of volunteers from the Civic Guard, generally the smartest men, and are frequently drilled.

There are six troops of Cavalry, viz., at Brussels, Antwerp, Liège, Ghent, Courtrai, and Mons. The horses are private-property, but the men are well mounted, and would in time of war be attached as orderlies to the various headquarters.

The Artillery is organised by siege batteries; but where two or more batteries exist in the same place, they form an artillery division under the command of a major.

The "Sapeurs Pompiers" or Firemen, distinguished from the paid "Sapeurs Pompiers Armés" of the cities and the "Sapeurs Pompiers Nonarmés" of the rural districts by being called "Volontaires," are infantry of the Civic Guard, who, in addition to their ordinary military duties, perform those of firemen.

The "Chasseurs éclaireurs" are formed into battalions of 3 and 4 companies, under command of a major; but if there are only 2 companies in the same place, they form a half battalion, commanded by a first captain.

A battalion consists of 6 companies and a staff. A legion is

**Organisation
of the Active
Guard.**

made up of either 3 or 2 battalions; in the former case it is commanded by a colonel in the latter case, by a lieutenant-colonel.

The effective strength of a company of infantry of the Active Guard varies from 60 to 150 men, not including officers and non-commissioned officers.

The troops (*pelotons*) of cavalry have an effective strength of 25 to 36 men, including officers and non-commissioned officers with a minimum of 80 men per squadron.

Each section of artillery consists of 30 to 40 men, including officers and non-commissioned officers; the battery has an effective strength of at least 60.

The cavalry and artillery may not include more than one-fortieth of the effective strength per commune:—

On 31st March, 1880, the Active Civic Guard included:—

1st. 22nd legions of infantry	..	..	22,080
Detached battalions	..	..	4,107
Company at Namur	..	..	103
			<hr/>
			26,290
2nd. Special Corps:			<hr/>
Chasseurs éclaireurs	..	..	1,343
„ Belges	..	..	170
Artillery	..	..	1,481
Cavalry	..	..	375
Firemen	..	..	203
			<hr/>
			3,572
			<hr/>
Total	..	..	29,862

A company of “chasseurs éclaireurs” was formed in addition at Charleroi by Royal Decree, 27th May, 1880.

**II. Non-active
Guard.**

II. *The Non-active Guard* consists of a cadre only. The men are unarmed, undrilled, and without uniform. When necessary they perform police duties on the requisition of the communal authorities, but can only be called into activity by decree from Government. The Non-active Guard numbers about 90,000.

**Proposed new
organisation.**

In November, 1870, a Commission was appointed to inquire into the organisation of the Civic Guard. The Commission finished its report in May, 1873; but up to the present time no steps have been taken to remodel the Guard.

The principal points in the project recommended by the Commission are: that every unmarried man or widower without children, between the ages of 20 and 32, should form the 1st Ban, and that all other men between 20 and 40 should form the 2nd Ban: the Guard to be organised by territorial conscription, irrespective of communes: in time of war, or when Belgian territory is threatened, the King to be empowered to order the

mobilisation of the 1st Ban, which should then pass at once under the authority of the War Minister. Proposed new organisation.

At present the Active Civic Guard numbers on an average about 29,000; but it is reckoned that under the above project the 1st Ban would muster 40,000, and would then be a substantial factor in the scheme of national defence, by taking the place of the regular troops in Antwerp and other fortresses. The men would bring their own arms and clothing, packs being served out to them if necessary on their arrival at their respective destinations.

The 2nd Ban would remain in their own localities as stationary battalions at the disposition of the Minister of the Interior; but in case of necessity the 2nd Ban could also be mobilised, and would then pass under the authority of the Minister of War.

In 1831-32 the "Garde Civique" was brigaded by alternate battalions with the regular troops, and did good service.

"Conseils de discipline" of the Civic Guard.

There is a "conseil de discipline" for the Civic Guard of one or more communes united. These councils are charged with the duty of repressing offences against the provisions of the law relating to the Civic Guard, as well as breaches of the regulations of the service drawn up by the commander of the Guard and approved by the Permanent Deputation of the Province. "Conseils de discipline."

The Councils have the following powers:—

1. Reprimand, and publication in orders.
2. Fine from 2 to 15 francs.
3. Imprisonment from 1 to 5 days.
4. Dismissal from the guard for one or several years.

The "conseil de discipline" is selected by lot, and renewed every three months. The President is a "juge de paix," or, in the absence of such an official, a major.

The council consists in addition of six members, a captain, lieutenant, sub-lieutenant, sub-officer, corporal, and private.

When the portion of the Civic Guard consists of a battalion only, or less than a battalion, the "conseil de discipline" is composed, besides the President, of a lieutenant or sub-lieutenant, a sub-officer, corporal, and private (4).

When the council consists of 7, including the President, the functions of the public minister are filled by a reporter (*rapporteur*) or assistant reporter: and in the other case by an officer appointed by the corps commander.

The functions of "greffier" or clerk of the court are filled by a Captain Quartermaster nominated by the commander of the Guard; and if the Guard consists of a battalion only, or less than a battalion, by a serjeant-major nominated by the commander of the corps.

CHAPTER VII.

ORGANISATION OF THE ARMY IN TIME OF PEACE.

THE duty of the army is to defend the territory against foreign aggression, and guard the neutrality of the country upon the maintenance of which depends the guarantee of its dependence by the Great Powers, and to assist in the preservation of public order. General organisation.

With a view to the attainment of the best means of opposing an invasion of Belgian territory, the army has been divided in such a manner that for mobilisation it can be easily formed into two great fractions:

1. The Field army.
2. The army of Antwerp.

Field army
and army of
Antwerp.

The Field army can take the field with four Divisions, and a fifth Division as a general reserve. This last, however, is only available after the mobilisation of the Civic Guard, the re-organisation of which remains to be effected.

The troops available after the formation of the Field army are detailed for the occupation of the fortresses, especially the intrenched camp of Antwerp, the great national citadel.

The four Divisions of the field army on War footing form two Army Corps, with a total effective strength of about 51,000. These units in time of peace are incomplete, both as to cadres and general composition, a state of things which might lead to serious complications in case of a hurried order to mobilise (*see* page 85).

Peace Organisation.

An Order in Council (*arrêté royal*) of 18th October, 1874, divided the kingdom into two great military districts (*circonscriptions militaires*).

- I. *Antwerp*. Headquarters at Antwerp, includes the provinces of Antwerp and East and West Flanders.
- II. *Brussels*. Headquarters at Brussels, includes the provinces of Brabant, Hainault, Liège, Limbourg, Luxembourg, and Namur.

Military districts ("circscriptions").

Military Districts.

Each military district is under the orders of a Lieutenant-General,* who has command of all military authorities, and all troops stationed in the district, without prejudice to the powers and duties of the following:—

Military Districts.

1. Officer commanding in chief the Cavalry.
2. Inspectors-General of Artillery, Engineers, and Medical Service.
3. The Chief Intendant of the Army.

* Names are blank in the Army List.

Military districts.

The Lieutenant-Generals commanding districts direct all the movements of troops ordered by the War Department. They are responsible for the discipline and tactical instruction of the troops; for keeping up the number of effectives as laid down in the law of the Budget for the year, and for the scrupulous observance of military regulations.

The staff of each district consists of—

Staff of military districts.

1. A Lieutenant-General and two aides-de-camp.
2. Chief of the Staff and Sub-Chief of the Staff, who are Field Officers of the Staff Corps; and a certain number of Staff Corps Captains as Assistants.
3. The Intendants in charge of the administration of each province (except Luxembourg).
4. A Director of Engineers.
5. A Director of Artillery.

The Directors of Artillery and Engineers of the 1st Military District are at Antwerp; those of the 2nd Military District at Liège.

The Intendants in charge of administrative duties reside in the chief town of each province.

*Provincial Commandants.***Provincial commandants.**

Each province is under the command of a Major-General (*général-major*) or Colonel, whose headquarters are in the chief town of the province, and who may be at the same time Commandant of the garrison (*commandant de place*). Three only of these are filled up: East Flanders, Liège, and Brabant.

Duties.

The Provincial Commandants have under their orders and immediate supervision (1) the fortresses, forts, and garrison towns; (2) the Commandants of towns and their Staffs; and (3) Officers Commanding Corps in all that has reference to the maintenance of order as well as general and daily duty. In addition, all the preliminaries concerning the recruitment of the army, as far as regards the "milice," come more specially within their sphere of work.

Provincial staff.

The Staff of the provinces, besides the nine Commandants, includes 9 Captains or Lieutenants as Aides-de-camp, selected from the Infantry. To the Provincial Staff are attached (1) one or more Sub-Intendants of the 1st Class, in charge of the active service of the administration in the province or arrondissement, and having their residence at the chief town of the province or arrondissement; (2) a Military Auditor* and his Assistant.

*Commandants of Towns ("Commandants de Place").**** Commandants de place.**

Garrison towns are usually commanded by a field officer bearing the title of "Commandant de Place."

These officers are assisted by a certain number of "adjutant-

* A functionary connected with the procedure of military Courts, and performing the duties of "juge d'instruction" and Clerk of the Court.

majors" or subaltern officers, who perform the duties of town major. "Commandants de Place."

In garrisons where there is no appointed commandant, the officer senior in rank performs the duties.

The "Commandants de Place" are in chief command in the fortresses, towns, citadels, and forts to which they are appointed. They are responsible for the details of duty, and for the general maintenance of order.

The staff of garrison towns comprises altogether: 20 field officers and adjutant-majors, 21 subaltern officers, and 31 military chaplains.

Artillery and Engineer Districts (Directions).

The number of these districts corresponds with that of the military districts (*circonscriptions militaires*). Artillery and engineer districts.

The directors are selected from the field officers of the branch of the service.

Those of the Artillery have, under the authority of the Inspector-General, the duty of inspecting the arsenals and magazines of the Artillery, as well as the matériel of fortified places: those of the Engineers are entrusted, under the authority of the Inspector-General of Fortifications and Corps of Engineers, with the keeping in order and repair of military buildings, the supervision of fortifications, and matériel of the Engineer Corps, as well as with the design and execution of all the permanent works of defence undertaken in the kingdom.

Administrative Districts (Directions d'Administration).

By ministerial explanatory circular of 7th March, 1874, each province forms an administrative district. The provinces of Luxembourg and Namur are exceptionally formed into a single district. Administrative districts.

A military intendant with the title of "Military Intendant in Charge of the Administration of the Province" is stationed in the chief town of every province, with the exception of Luxembourg. He is charged with the control of the accounts of the troops, and with the regulation of the general military expenses.

A military sub-intendant of the first class is appointed in certain garrison towns to direct the service of the establishments in that part of the territory assigned to him. He has the title of "Military Sub-intendant in Charge of the Duties in the Province (or Arrondissement) of ———."

Territorial
districts, &c.

TABLE of Territorial Districts, &c.

Territorial Districts.	1st Military District (<i>circonscription militaire</i>). Headquarters :—Antwerp. Provinces :—Antwerp, West Flanders, East Flanders. (3)
	2nd Military District. Headquarters :—Brussels. Provinces :—Brabant, Hainault, Liège, Limbourg, Luxembourg, Namur. (6)
	1st Military District. Antwerp. Termonde.
	2nd Military District. Diest, Liège, Namur.
Fortresses in	1st Military District. Alost, Antwerp, Audenarde, Artillery Practice Ground at Brasschaet, Bruges, Courtrai, Ghent, Hoogstraeten, Lierre, Malines, Menin, Ostende, St. Bernard, St. Nicholas, Termonde, Ypres.
	2nd Military District. Arlon, Ath, Beverloo, Bouillon, Brussels, Diest, Dinant, Hasselt, Huy, Laeken, Liège, Louvain, Mariembourg, Mons, Namur, Philippeville, St. Trond, Tirlemont, Tournay, Vilvorde.
Garrisons in	1st Military District. Alost, Antwerp, Audenarde, Artillery Practice Ground at Brasschaet, Bruges, Courtrai, Ghent, Hoogstraeten, Lierre, Malines, Menin, Ostende, St. Bernard, St. Nicholas, Termonde, Ypres.
	2nd Military District. Arlon, Ath, Beverloo, Bouillon, Brussels, Diest, Dinant, Hasselt, Huy, Laeken, Liège, Louvain, Mariembourg, Mons, Namur, Philippeville, St. Trond, Tirlemont, Tournay, Vilvorde.
Military Establishments and Institutions.	War School Ixelles.
	Military School Ixelles.
	School for Volunteers of Infantry .. Louvain and Audenarde.
	School for Soldiers' Children .. Alost.
	Riding School Ypres.
	School of Gunnery Brasschaet.
	Pyrotechnical School Antwerp.
	Arsenal of construction Antwerp.
	Cannon Foundry Liège.
	Small Arm Factory "
	Musketry School Beverloo.
	School of Field works Antwerp.

*Directions of Fortresses.*Directions of
fortresses.

The number of directions of fortresses is as follows :—

1st Military District.	1st direction of fortifications (Head Qrs., Antwerp.)	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Enceinte of Antwerp (town and enceinte). 2. 1st section of intrenched camp at Antwerp (fort of Merxem, practice-ground at Brasschaet, and projected fort of Schooten). 3. 2nd section of intrenched camp of Antwerp (forts 1, 2, 3, and 4, and dépôt of Contich). 4. 3rd section of intrenched camp of Antwerp (forts 5, 6, 7, 8, and St. Bernard). 5. 4th section of intrenched camp of Antwerp (forts Tête-de-Flandre, Cruybeke, Zwynndrecht, defensive dyke, dépôt of Beveren, and projected fort of Rupelmonde). 6. 5th section of intrenched camp of Antwerp (forts of Lower Scheldt and maritime zone). 7. Malines, Lierre.
	2nd direction of fortifications (Head Qrs., Ghent.)	<ol style="list-style-type: none"> 1. Ghent, Audenarde. 2. Termonde, St. Nicolas, Alost. 3. Bruges, Knocke. 4. Ostende, Nieuport, Furnes. 5. Ypres, Menin, Courtrai.

2ND MILITARY DISTRICT.	2nd direction of fortifications (Head Quarters Liège).	1. Liège, Huy, Arlon, Bouillon.	Directions of fortresses.
		2. Beverloo Camp, Hasselt, Saint-Trond.	
		3. Diest.	
		4. Louvain, Tirlemont, Wavre.	
		5. Brussels, Laeken, Vilvorde.	
		6. Namur, Dinant, Philippeville, Mariembourg.	
		7. Mons, Charleroi.	
		8. Tournai, Ath.	

The fortresses actually existing are :—

Fortresses.

Antwerp and dependencies.
Termonde.
Diest.
Namur.
Liège,
Huy (not kept up).

The directions in peace time have charge of the maintenance and repair of barracks and military buildings.

Distribution of the Army.

The following table shows the composition of Divisions and Distribution brigades of the army during peace, and the headquarters of the of the army. various staffs :—

<i>Infantry.</i>			
1st MILITARY DISTRICT	1st Division (Ghent)	1st Brigade (Bruges).	1 Regt. at Ypres.
		2nd Brigade (Ghent).	1 " Bruges.
	2nd Division (Antwerp)	3rd Brigade (Antwerp)	1 Regt. at Ghent.
		4th Brigade (Antwerp)	1 " at Ostende.
	3rd Division (Liège)	5th Brigade (Namur)	2 Regts. at Antwerp.
		6th Brigade (Liège)..	2 Regts. at Antwerp.
		7th Brigade (Ghent)	1 Regt. at Liège
		8th Brigade	1 " Namur
	4th Division (Brussels)	9th Brigade	1 Regt. at Liège
			1 " Arlon
			1 Regt. at Mons
			1 " Ghent

Cavalry.

Inspection General at Brussels.	1st Division (Brussels)	1st Brigade (Ghent)	1 Regt. at Ghent
		2nd Brigade (Brussels)	1 " Bruges
	2nd Division (Louvain)	1st Brigade (Namur)	1 Regt. at Ypres
		2nd Brigade (Mons)	1 " and Audenarde
			1 Regt. at Brussels
			1 Regt. at Namur

Artillery.

Inspection General at Brussels.	1st Brigade (Ghent)	2 Field Regiments at Ghent, Malines, and Antwerp.
	2nd Brigade (Brussels)	2 Field Regiments at Liège, Brussels, and Tirlemont.
	3rd Brigade (Antwerp)	3 Siege Artillery Regiments at Antwerp, Liège, Diest, Namur and Termonde.

istribution
the army.

Corps not Brigaded.

Regiment of Engineers.
Sedentary (*sédentaire*) Companies.
Corps of discipline and correction.
Special Companies (Artillery and Engineers).
Military Establishments and Institutions.
Gendarmerie.
Administration Battalion.

Official re-
turns of
strength of
my.

The following official returns show the peace strength and *estimated* war strength of the Belgian Army in 1870, 1875, 1878, and 1879, respectively.

Troops *paid* represent peace strength; *without pay* the classes on furlough; totals, *estimated number available for incorporation in the army.*

Arm.	1870.			1875.			
	Paid.	Without Pay.	Total.	Officers.	Troops.		
					Paid.	Without Pay.	Total.
Infantry	30,751	39,505	70,256	1,775	23,226	44,841	68,067
Cavalry	5,792	3,586	9,378	365	5,097	3,154	8,251
Artillery	7,321	5,750	13,071	376	6,663	7,618	14,281
Engineers	1,011	958	1,969	71	1,119	1,314	2,433
Other Corps* ..	..	..	..	582	2,886	2,590	5,476
	44,875	49,799	94,674	3,169	38,991	59,517	98,508

* Gendarmerie, Train, Administration Battalions, Staffs, &c.

Arm.	1878.				1879.			
	Officers.	Troops.			Officers.	Troops.		
		Paid.	Without Pay.	Total.		Paid.	Without Pay.	Total.
Infantry	1,817	25,217	46,549	71,766	1,811	25,685	46,048	71,733
Cavalry	364	5,803	2,536	8,339	362	5,449	2,804	8,253
Artillery	422	7,569	9,536	17,105	430	7,493	10,025	17,518
Engineers	86	1,416	1,725	3,141	85	1,433	1,920	3,353
Other corps* ..	617	3,153	3,909	7,062	629	3,198	4,365	7,563
	3,306	43,158	64,255	107,413	3,317	43,258	65,162	108,420

* Gendarmerie, train, administrative battalions, staffs, &c.

CHAPTER VIII.

MOBILISATION, WAR STRENGTH, AND DEFENCE OF BELGIUM.

- I. Mobilisation: War Strength and Organisation of the Army.
- II. Scheme of Defence of Belgium and Description of Fortresses.

I. MOBILISATION.

THE corps composing the Belgian Army are not localised, that is, each regiment and department receives its recruits from all the provinces indifferently.

The reason for this is, that there are two distinct populations in Belgium, the Flemish and the Walloon, and if the regiments were localised they would consist exclusively of one race or another, speaking two languages—Flemish and French—and so practically separated in customs and interests as to be unable to agree and work together in military service.

It is notified yearly to each regiment from which province it is to draw its contingent of recruits, and a regiment never draws its recruits from the same province in two successive years.

The inconvenience of this arrangement for prompt mobilisation is evident, as the men recalled from their homes to complete the ranks of their corps would arrive from many different quarters. The scheme of mobilisation points to a concentration towards Antwerp, where the men would be equipped at the dépôts of their regiments, and it is considered that owing to the smallness of the distances to be travelled and the close network of railways throughout the country, there would be no difficulty or delay in the process of mobilisation.*

If it is required at any time to raise the strength of the army or any portion of it, the men on furlough can be recalled to serve with their regiments by Royal Decree. The class last dismissed to their homes is the first class to be summoned. When the men go to their homes on furlough, they leave their arms and equipment in store, the Infantry and Artillery at the dépôts of their regiments, and the Cavalry at their regimental headquarters.

An Order in Council of 7th August, 1877, modifying that of 18th October, 1874, lays down the necessary measures for assuring the recall of "miliciens," and the prompt mobilisation of the army.

By this order the arrangements for the mobilisation of the men on unlimited leave are prepared and directed in each Gendarmerie
provincial
districts.

* Belgium is about one-eighteenth the area of France. To mobilise the Belgian Army ought not therefore greatly to exceed the time for the same process in a French or German Army Corps.

arrangements or mobilisation. *Military Provincial District* by an officer of gendarmerie called "Commandant de District Militaire."

Sub-officers and "brigadiers" (corporals of gendarmerie) are placed at his disposal: in populous districts a lieutenant or sub-lieutenant may be detailed to assist him.

Military cantons.

In *Military Cantons* the operations of recall are prepared and directed by sub-officers and "brigadiers" of gendarmerie, bearing the title of *Commandant de Canton militaire*. In the chief towns of populous districts the functions of "commandant de canton" are filled by the officers assisting (*adjoints*) the gendarmerie commandants of the district (*commandants de district militaire*).

The commandants of districts (*gendarmerie*) are in addition charged with the collection and classification of all information and statistics which would be useful in the case of mobilisation.

In everything that concerns mobilisation, the commandants of districts (*gendarmerie*) receive instructions from the military commandants of provinces. Every year the latter inspect with the greatest care the records (*archives*) of the district commandants (*gendarmerie*), and render a report of their inspection to the Minister of War.

The district commandants (*gendarmerie*) correspond directly with Commandants of Provinces, commanding officers of regiments, and burgomasters: the latter are bound to furnish without delay all the information required to keep up to date the "registre d'inscription" and the states, lists, &c., referring to "miliciens" on unlimited furlough.

The commandants of districts (*gendarmerie*) transmit this information to officers commanding regiments, and they receive in return from the latter notifications of the changes which take place in the position of the men. They give notice of these changes to the burgomasters. The commandants of these districts also communicate to the commandants of cantons information as to changes which the latter require to know.

Any difficulties or differences which may be occasioned by the reports of the commandants of districts or cantons with the burgomasters are to be submitted by the district commandants (*gendarmerie*) to the Military Provincial Commandants, who arrange the matter with the Governors of Provinces.

Clause II of the Order in Council of 7th August, 1877, refers to changes in residence or otherwise of men on furlough.

Clause III refers to the inspections which men on unlimited furlough are subject to each year,* and lays down that they should present themselves at their inspections in uniform, carrying their pocket ledgers (*livrets*).

Clause IV contains detailed instructions for the recall of "miliciens."

All employes causing delay or impediment in the execution of the measures laid down in the Order in Council of 7th August,

* *Vide Infra.*

1877, will be punished in conformity with the law of 5th March, 1818.

Arrangements
for
mobilisation.

The Order in Council is followed by a very detailed explanation, which regulates the execution (1) as regards keeping the registers and lists of men on unlimited furlough; (2) the yearly inspections (*revue de contrôle*); and (3) the manner of recall in case of mobilisation of the army.

In this Order in Council the insufficient penalties to be inflicted by the law of 6th March, 1818, on negligent employes have been revised. These punishments consist of a fine of 100 florins as a maximum, and a minimum of 10 florins; they are now convertible into imprisonment from one to eight days.

The employment of the gendarmerie for the operations of mobilisation is not considered to be a happy innovation. It has been held that preference should be given to a cadre of special subaltern officers, to be entrusted with preparatory measures of mobilisation.

On the order for mobilisation, the recall of men on unlimited furlough is the duty of the lieutenants and sub-lieutenants of gendarmerie in command of the 32 military districts of the territory (as stated above). These officers are assisted by the sub-officers or corporals of gendarmerie commanding the cantons, to the number of 303.

Proceedings
on mobilisa-
tion.

The commandants of districts (*gendarmerie*) keep the registers of the men on unlimited furlough; the commandants of cantons keep up the nominal rolls by "communes" of the men on unlimited furlough, who each year in the month of November are inspected by the commandant of the district to which they belong.

Annual
inspection of
men on
furlough.

The objects of the inspection are:—

- 1st. To make sure that the men are present.
- 2nd. To see the state of the equipment in their possession.
- 3rd. To verify the correctness of the lists and registers kept by the commanding officers of corps, the commandants of cantons, and the burgomasters.
- 4th. To bring forward for retirement men unfit for service.
- 5th. To instruct the men in their duties on mobilisation.

By Royal Decree of 14th December, 1875, soldiers (*militaires*) on unlimited furlough are in activity during the whole day of inspection, and are subject to the jurisdiction of military laws and regulations for any infraction of the same during that day. Men on unlimited furlough are forbidden to wear their military clothing unless obliged to do so. Men who infringe this rule may be recalled to the colours for a period of three months.

By the terms of Royal Decree of 7th August, 1877, and of ministerial explanatory circulars of 15th of same month, the men are recalled to the colours either by orders of recall (*ordres de rappel*), stating the date, the day of the week, the hour and place of assembly in the commune; or by orders to rejoin (*ordres de rejoindre*). The former are used only in case of

Mobilisation
orders of
recall.

Mobilisation ; mobilisation for the recall of men on unlimited furlough. They are drawn up on *blue paper** by the district commandants of gendarmerie, and are included in the records of their offices.

orders of recall.

The *order of recall (rappel)* states that the man is to furnish himself with rations for the day, and that if he arrives with a good pair of boots he will be permitted to wear them in the ranks.

As soon as the *gendarmerie commandants of districts* receive notice by telegram that mobilisation is ordered, they complete the *orders of recall* by entering on them the date and day of the week for the assembly of the men at the "commune," and have them sent at once to the *commandants of cantons* (with the ministerial instruction for the burgomasters and commandants of cantons) by the gendarmes of the chief town of the district. These orders, as well as the instructions intended for the burgomasters, are placed in the hands of the communal authorities by the gendarmes of the cantons.

In the absence of gendarmes, or in case they are not in sufficient number, the commandants of districts and cantons are authorised to employ Government servants, such as postmen, custom-house officers, &c., and, in the absence of these, trustworthy and intelligent messengers, who have a right to be paid at the rate of 95 c. or 1 fr. 90 c. per league of 5 kilometres, according as the journey is made on foot or on horseback. In each *district* a table is kept, showing the route to be followed by all messengers going to the cantons or communes, as well as the time employed on the journey.

The gendarmes or messengers deliver these *orders of recall* to the burgomasters, who give them to the persons interested, and at the same time by posters and placards on the public highways give notice that all men on unlimited furlough are recalled to the colours, and should be by such a day and at such an hour at the point of assembly mentioned. Ignorance is not admitted as an excuse.

To avoid all delay in the transmission of *orders of recall*, they are arranged in packets by communes, the packets bearing the address of the burgomaster; they are then inclosed in a cover addressed to the commandant of the canton. An explanatory circular of the Minister of War and a receipt are placed in each of the packets destined for the burgomasters and commandants of cantons.

The men are collected through the agency of the communal authority, and are then conducted by the commandant of the canton to the station from which they are to start, whence they are sent to the dépôts to be clothed, armed, and equipped; the clothing being the property of the man, and always at the dépôt there is no difficulty in the distribution on mobilisation. If for

* The orders to rejoin (*ordre de rejoindre*) which are specially intended for time of peace, are made out by commanding officers of corps on *white paper*, and are sent out by them to recall to the colours men on unlimited furlough.

any reason the men cannot be put into the train at the station indicated, they are to be marched by the ordinary routes to the dépôt or else taken to some station close by; the commandants of detachments and commandants of cantons are therefore authorised to requisition the necessary means of transport, as well as food and lodging from the inhabitants.

From the time mobilisation is ordered, military men of all ranks, whether travelling alone, in detachments, or in corps, whether in uniform or not, are entitled to a free passage on all lines of railway on the presentation of their order to march, of their furlough, or of any document establishing their identity. No administrative formality can be required of commanding officers of corps or detachments travelling by rail.

The men travel according to the number by ordinary or by special trains. Special time tables are prepared in readiness and to avoid any loss of time whatever, or any useless expenditure of labour, the points of assembly and concentration as well as the stations of embarkation, have been laid down in such a manner that all the details of the movements relate to a general concentration towards the dépôts.

Men on unlimited furlough cannot travel or go abroad, to stay or reside, except by special authority from the War Department, and on the condition that they give notice to their burgo-master of the route they propose to take in travelling and their probable date of return, or their intended place of residence. They are bound to return to Belgium when their class is first called up on the army being mobilised. In the *order of recall* destined for them, the date, hour, and place of assembly are replaced by the words "immediately and directly to the dépôt of the corps at —."

The organisation of the army does not include a reserve of officers.

A general plan of mobilisation was adopted during the years 1876 and 1877; it indicates day by day the measures necessary for completing the effective strength in men, horses, &c., and for concentrating the army in positions selected beforehand. There is also a general explanatory circular (*instruction générale*) on the mobilisation of the army, bearing date 20th February, 1878. This, as well as the general plan of mobilisation, is confidential. The latter forms part of the documents kept up by regulation in every company, squadron, or battery.

As regards the horses required to complete the establishment on mobilisation, recourse must be had to purchase, as there is no law on the requisition of horses in Belgium.

It is calculated that the Infantry would complete its effective strength by the fourth day; the Cavalry and Artillery by the ninth day; the Train and other services by the fifteenth day.

War Strength and Organisation.

The Belgian Army on War footing consists of two distinct groups (as before stated):—

- 1st. The Field Army (2 Army Corps) for operating actively against an invader, backed by
- 2nd. The Army of Antwerp for the defence of the great national stronghold.

The Field Army will include:—

Field Army. Four Divisions formed into two Army Corps, to take the field at once. A fifth field Division will be eventually formed. This Division will not be available for the field till after the mobilisation of the Civic Guard.

Composition of the four field Divisions.

Each field Division will be composed as follows:—

- 2 Infantry Brigades (12 battalions),
- 1 Battalion of Rifle Regiment,
- 1 Regiment of Cavalry (4 squadrons),
- 4 Batteries of Field Artillery (24 guns),
- 1 Infantry ammunition column,
- 1 Company of Engineers,
- 1 Artillery ammunition column,
- 1 Ambulance column,
- 1 Commissariat column.

5th Division. The 5th Division will be made up of 13th and 14th line Regiments (6 battalions), and non-active battalions of first six Regiments of the line, or a total of 12 battalions; the reinforcing squadrons of Cavalry; and reserve Batteries when armed.

Cavalry. The four first squadrons of each of the eight Regiments of Cavalry are completed on mobilisation by the 5th squadron (of reinforcement) which then becomes a dépôt squadron.

Artillery. The Divisional Artillery consists of 16 Field Batteries of 1st and 3rd Field Regiments, or 96 guns. The 2nd Regiment of Artillery (7 field and 2 horse artillery batteries) 54 guns, forms the Corps Artillery of the 1st Army Corps; and the 4th Regiment (same composition) forms that of 2nd Army Corps, or a grand total of 204 guns.

The six reserve batteries (four belonging to 1st and 3rd Field Regiments, and two to the 2nd and 4th Regiments) will form when armed the artillery of 5th Field Division, or 36 guns in addition.

Train. The effective strength of the companies of the Train would have to be considerably increased on mobilisation, as the number of men of the Train on furlough is insufficient. With this view the oldest classes belonging to the Cavalry will pass to the Train if not required to complete the squadrons.

The following also belong to the Field Army:—

1 Field Telegraph Company,
 1 Pontoon Company,
 1 Company of Armourers.
 2 Infantry ammunition columns per Corps.
 2 Columns Commissariat Artillery per Corps.
 1 Engineer Park per Corps.
 1 Ambulance „ „
 4 Columns Field Hospital per Corps.
 Detachment Gendarmerie per Corps.

Divisional and
corps auxil-
iary services.

Reckoning the strength of the infantry battalions at 750, the Strength of
squadrons at 140, horse artillery batteries at 164, and field bat- Field Army.
teries at 150 (exclusive of officers), the field army will number
about 50,000 combatants with 204 guns, independently of the 5th
Division, the formation of which is doubtful. These numbers
may be arrived at as follows:—

Infantry ..	52 Battalions at 750	=	39,000
Cavalry ..	32 squadrons at 140	=	4,480
Engineers..	4 companies and Parks	=	800
Train, Gendarmerie, &c.	..	=	1,000

45,280

Artillery.—4 H.A. Batteries at 164 }
 30 Mtd. „ at 150 } 5,156 and 204 guns.

50,436 and 204 guns.

The twenty non-active battalions are destined, in case of The Army of
mobilisation, to occupy Antwerp and other fortified points. It Antwerp.
is well to bear in mind that the 13th and 14th line regiments
and the non-active battalions of the first six regiments of the
line are merged in the 5th Division of the field army as soon as
it becomes possible to supply their place by the battalions of the
Civic Guard.

The army of Antwerp includes in addition all the other
troops of the army, viz. :—

The dépôts of the different arms,
 Fortress artillery,
 Engineers and special companies, not forming part of the
 field army.
 Estimated Total, 40,000.

The following is the official return of the effective strength
of the army in officers, men with colours, and men on furlough
in 1879:—

*Estimates of
War strength.*

Arm.	Officers.	Men.		Total of two Columns.
		Paid.	Unpaid.	
Infantry	1,811	25,685	46,048	71,733
Cavalry	362	5,449	2,804	8,253
Artillery	430	7,493	10,025	17,518
Engineers	85	1,433	1,920	3,353
Gendarmes, Train	629	3,198	4,365	7,563
Administration, Staff				
Totals	3,317	43,258	65,163	108,420

or a total of 3,317 officers and 108,420 men of *ten* classes.

The column, "without pay," includes all men who have been dismissed on permanent furlough, and who are liable to be called up on mobilisation.

By law the King can, in case of war, or when the integrity of the Belgian territory is threatened, call into activity the number of classes on furlough, beginning with the last.

In 1870, when the army was mobilised, the ninth and tenth* classes, of which the unmarried men only are liable to recall, showed an aggregate of 14,400 casualties, on the 20,000 originally enrolled, or 60 per cent. The actual force mobilised was about 75,000 men out of an estimated war strength of 94,600.

Authorities differ as to what would be the war strength. General Renard (War Minister) calculated that the result of the organisation of 1873 would give:—

51 generals,
3,503 officers,
106,988 sub-officers and men.

It is now acknowledged that this is a fallacious estimate.

The effective war strength, according to Captain Platenga ("Militaire aardrijks kunde en Statistiek von Belgie") would amount to—

Staffs	1,900
Intendance	206
Infantry	75,541
Cavalry	7,600
Field artillery.. .. .	11,009
Siege "	3,029
Special arms	3,016
Administration and Train	1,388
Total	103,689

* It is to be borne in mind that the ninth and tenth classes are on a different footing to the first eight or active classes. (See "Recruitment," p. 19.)

WAR ORGANISATION OF BELGIAN ARMY.

Infantry.		Cavalry.	Artillery.	Companies of Engineers.	Auxiliary Services for Divisions.	Auxiliary Services for each Army Corps.
Brigades.	16 Regiments of 8 Battalions and 4 Divisional Battalions. (52 Battalions).	8 Regiments of 4 Squadrons. (32 Squadrons).	30 Mounted Batteries. 4 Horse Batteries. [204 guns.]			
1st Corps..	1st. { 2nd	1st Chasseurs.	1st, 2nd, 3rd, and 4th Mtd. Batteries	1st ..	1 Infantry ammunition Col., 1 Artillery ammunition Col., 1 Ambulance Col., 1 Commissariat Col.	Portion of Field Telegraph, do. Pontoon Co., do. Co. Armourers, 2 Infantry ammunition Cols., 2 Artillery ammunition Cols., 2 Cols. Commissariat, 1 Engineer Park, 1 Ambulance Park, 4 Cols. Field Hospital, Gendarmerie.
	2nd { 3rd. 4th.	2nd Chasseurs.	5th, 6th, 7th, and 8th Mtd. Batteries	2nd..	Do.	
2nd Corps.	3rd. { 6th.	2nd Guides ..	21st, 22nd, 23rd, 24th Mtd. Batteries	3rd..	Do.	
	4th { 7th. 8th.	1st Guides ..	25th, 26th, 27th, 28th Mtd. Batteries	4th..	Do.	Do.
Independent Cavalry	1st. { 2nd	1st & 2nd Lers. 3rd & 4th Lers.	31st, 32nd, 33rd, 34th, 35th, 36th, 37th Mtd. Batteries, 38th and 39th H.A. Batteries [H.A. Batteries]*	..	2 Ambulance Cols.	* From Corps Artillery.
5th Field Division	9th.	Reinforcing squadrons	Reserve Batteries when armed (9th, 10th, 20th, 29th, 30th, 40th.) [36 guns]	This division can eventually join the Field Army on the mobilisation of the Civic Guard.		
10th	Six 4th Battalions.					

The army of Antwerp will include, in addition, the remaining 4th Battalions for the defence of the forts and enceinte, the reinforcing squadrons, and all the Engineers, Siege Artillery, &c., stationed in the intrenched camp and its dependencies.

The army of Antwerp will include, in addition, the remaining 4th Battalions for the defence of the forts and enceinte, the reinforcing squadrons, and all the Engineers, Siege Artillery, &c., stationed in the entrenched camp and its dependencies.

War strength. The above are very favourable calculations, and it will be necessary to set at a much lower value the real available war strength of the Belgian Army, owing to the "waste" which takes place in the contingents from various causes.

In 1889 it may be assumed that eight contingents of 12,000 each will be available for incorporation, the allowance for casualties being 1,450 in excess of that number, or a normal contingent of 13,450 per annum. But even with this allowance it is calculated (*vide* p. 29) that there will still be a loss of 12 per cent., and that the number available for the actual defence of the country will not exceed, including "miliciens," substitutes, and volunteers, more than 90,000 on the eight active classes. There remain the 9th and 10th classes, but the number of these is doubtful.

It is probable that at present (1882) there are not more than 90,000 men available for the defence of the country, on the most favourable calculation, including the 9th and 10th classes, but exclusive of the Civic Guard.

The tabular statement on Page 85 shows the War Organisation of the Belgian army.

II. SCHEME FOR THE DEFENCE OF BELGIUM AND DESCRIPTION OF FORTRESSES.

Scheme for the defence of Belgium.

On the separation of Holland and Belgium in 1830, the question of the defence of the latter country assumed a new aspect.

While the two countries were united, the prime object was defence against invasion from France; and the scope of the plan devised by the Duke of Wellington in 1814, included the safe concentration of the army of the United Kingdom of the Netherlands within a "rayon" of fortresses, which covered the points of disembarkation on the Belgian coast, and were to be held until the offensive could be taken with the assistance of an English army.

The transformation of Belgium into a neutral kingdom, guaranteed by all the Great Powers, entailed a new arrangement, which would ensure the observance of its neutrality against all comers, at the same time providing for the disembarkation of an English force.

The question was in a very small compass. The great and only important port of Belgium is Antwerp; and it was resolved to make that the kernel of the national defence.

With this object (in 1859) the fortifications of Ostende, Nieuport, Ypres, Menin, Tournai, Mons, Charleroi, Ath, Namur, Philippeville (connected with the old scheme of defence) were razed; while the defensive works of Antwerp have been gradually extended and improved, till it now forms an intrenched camp on both banks of the Scheldt.

In addition to Antwerp, the following defensive works have been retained :—

1. The tête-de-pont of *Termonde* on the Scheldt (20 miles S.W. of Antwerp).
2. The citadel of *Namur*, and the 2 forts near *Liège* on the Meuse.
3. The small fortress of *Diest* (finished in 1838), between the Meuse and Scheldt on the line of operations which resting on the Meuse from *Liège* to *Maestricht* aims at Brussels and Antwerp.

This radical reform of the system of defence was made with the object of concentrating the defence,* and freeing the field army from the necessity of finding garrisons for a great number of small fortresses. With this view they have been replaced by a vast central stronghold into which the army can, if necessary, retire before superior forces.

The considerations which have led to the selection of Antwerp, and not Brussels, as the central stronghold, are partly *political* and partly *military*.

Politically speaking, it was rightly considered that Brussels has not, as regards Belgium, the importance which other capitals have in countries where the government is more centralised. The commercial and industrial towns close by—*Liège*, *Ghent*, *Bruges*, and *Antwerp*, but *Antwerp* above all—are also great centres of importance. It must be taken into consideration also that Belgium is too small in size, too devoid of natural lines of defence, to be able to contend by herself against either of her powerful neighbours. If war breaks out, the army should occupy a position favourable for defence against superior numbers, and await assistance from one at least of the Powers guaranteeing the neutrality of Belgium. This last consideration points to the choice of a position of such a nature as to facilitate as much as possible the junction of the Belgian army with the forces of the country on the support of which it has the best right to count.

That country is England, which is presumed to have an interest in preventing Antwerp from falling into the hands of a first-rate Power. Brussels, on the other hand, is of much less importance to England. The junction of an English army of relief with a Belgian army shut up at Brussels would be easily frustrated by an enemy, whilst Antwerp is a favourable point of disembarkation for an English army, and would also be far preferable to Brussels if it were a question of uniting the Dutch and Belgian forces. From a political point of view, therefore, the great town on the Scheldt deserves the preference.

There are also many cases in which Antwerp would receive succour either from France or Germany, as easily as Brussels.

* In Belgium, the studies of the Staff in view of probable wars are simplified, for the method of concentration in all cases is the same; the object is to unite the army between *Termonde* and *Diest*, the left towards *Hasselt* and the Campine, the right thrown forward into the valley of the *Dendre*, so as to rest on the defensive position of Antwerp, and to be able thence to operate in the direction of the menaced frontiers.—*Notes sur le Service des États-Majors (Lahure)*.

Strategical
importance
of Antwerp.

The only advantage the latter possesses over Antwerp is that it is the seat of Government.

The *strategical* importance of Antwerp has been often disputed, for the reason that it is not in the centre of the country, and is too far from the line along the valley of the Meuse by Givet or Charleroi—Liège—Aix la Chapelle—Cologne, on which the French and German armies, marching across Belgium, would most probably operate. Antwerp, however, is only one day's march further from Liège than Brussels; the Belgian army, in the case contemplated, would take position in front of Antwerp behind the Nethe and between Lierre and Malines. It may be assumed therefore that Antwerp has about the same value as Brussels for the purpose of taking in flank the line of operations along the banks of the Meuse.

Resources of
Antwerp.

As compared with Brussels, Antwerp has many other advantages. The first condition which an intrenched camp should satisfy is to assure the means of subsistence to the army which is to be sheltered. Communication with the capital might easily be cut off soon after the declaration of war, and the stores of provisions sent by rail and canal intercepted. Moreover, Brussels has no important trade in corn, cattle, or colonial produce, and it may be assumed that after the first week's investment, the army and the inhabitants would begin to suffer privations. With Antwerp it is very different. In the first place, it has 226,000 fewer inhabitants than Brussels, and therefore a more limited consumption. As a commercial town of the first class, Antwerp always contains large stores of grain, rice, preserved meat, colonial produce, wine, oil, butter, cloth, iron, timber—in a word, resources of every kind, which not only facilitate the feeding of the inhabitants, but also conduce largely to an obstinate defence. Added to this, Antwerp is on the borders of the rich and fertile country of Waes (on the left bank of the Scheldt) and can therefore be completely provisioned in a few days.

Difficulty of
investing
Antwerp.

Again, Antwerp is more difficult to invest than Brussels: first, from its situation on a great river; and, secondly, because the town can be partially protected by inundations. From this it follows that an enemy is considerably limited in his choice of a front of attack, and that the defence of Antwerp, which can be secured by a smaller number of forts than Brussels, will allow of a reduction of personnel and matériel for the purpose. On the perimeter of the intrenched camp of Antwerp, which measures 28 miles, there are actually only six fronts, including a total length of $8\frac{1}{2}$ miles along the line of forts open to a regular siege; while Brussels, turned into an intrenched camp, would be exposed to a gradually developed attack at almost all points, and each front would have to be of equal defensive strength, which is not the case at Antwerp. The fortification of the capital would therefore have entailed a much greater expense. If it be taken into consideration that the works of Antwerp have already cost from £2,800,000 to

£3,200,000, and are still incomplete, it is evident that the extra expense which would have been necessitated for the defensive works of Brussels is an important argument against the capital.

Lastly, it may be remarked, that in case of war breaking out suddenly, the concentration of the army in the position at Antwerp would be safer than at Brussels. Antwerp is further than Brussels from the southern and eastern frontiers, which are the most threatened, and there are zones of defence to the south-east of Antwerp (the Nethe, Dyle, Rupel), where the enemy might be delayed for some time. In front of Brussels there is nothing of the kind.

The citadel of *Namur* and the forts near *Liège* have been retained, because the principal points of passage* of the Meuse are in the neighbourhood of these places, and because there are important junctions on the lines of railway at those points. *Liège* in particular, setting aside the great military value which the town owes to its manufacture of arms, has a great strategical importance. The lines Cologne—Brussels—Antwerp, and Cologne—Aix-la-Chapelle—Charleroi, cross the river here. The old forts of *Liège* and the citadel of *Namur* may therefore be considered delaying or frontier forts.

Similarly, *Diest*† bars the line Maestricht—Antwerp. It forms a double tête-de-pont, and permits the retreat of the Belgian Army behind the Demer, if beaten in an offensive action towards the line of the Meuse, and followed up in pursuit in the direction of St. Trond. In most cases, its utility would be very slight, and if it were not for the fact that the works of *Diest* only date from 1838—that is to say, if they were not quite modern—the fortress would have been dismantled in 1859.

The fortress of *Termonde*, on the right bank of the Scheldt, with a small tête-de-pont on the left bank, is of the utmost importance. It covers the last bridge over the Lower Scheldt, and bars in addition several lines of railway,—amongst them the line from France by Ath and Alost to Malines. *Termonde* is closely connected with Antwerp, from which it is distant only one day's march. It gives an army occupying the central stronghold an opportunity of acting on the offensive as long as Antwerp is only invested on one bank of the Scheldt.

A fortress of the size of *Antwerp* cannot, from the nature of the circumstances, be continually kept up in a complete state of defence. According to Brialmont, it would take at least four-

* The question of constructing four new bridges over the Meuse at Herstal, Sclayn, Bas-ohu, and Flémalle-le-Grande, is under consideration. General Brialmont in his "Situation Militaire de la Belgique, 1882," most strongly advocates such additions to the defences of *Liège* and *Namur* as would enable these towns to stand a regular siege, and so deny the valley of the Meuse as a line of operations to either a French or German army. The Ministry disapproved of General Brialmont's suggestions, and elected to abide by the plan of defence elaborated in 1859, as summarised in these pages.

† The fortress of *Diest*, the construction of which was decided on in 1836 (in apprehension of a fresh invasion by the Dutch army), is now only of secondary importance; if it did not already exist there would be no thought of its construction.

Expense of fortifying the capital.

Advantages of Antwerp for concentration.

Namur and Liège.

Diest.

Termonde, its importance.

Time required to place Antwerp in a state of defence.

teen days to place it in a state to make such a resistance as might be expected from it. As it is situated at a distance of only four or five days' march from the southern and eastern frontiers, there is the danger in case of a sudden outbreak of war, that the enemy might make his appearance before it, when the preparations for defence, and even the concentration of the Belgian troops, would be still incomplete.

To guard against this eventuality, it would be necessary to obstruct the march of the enemy, and this is rendered easy from the natural advantages of the position of Antwerp.

Antwerp,
outer line of
defence.

In front of the southern part of the intrenched camp—that is the portion most exposed to attack—is found at about 9½ miles from the fortifications, a “terrain” which lends itself easily to defence for a short time. The line is formed by the Rupel, the Lower Dyle, and the Nethe. These small rivers, the banks of which can be inundated in a few days, would constitute serious obstacles, as they can only be crossed at a few points. These points would be closed at once by field-works, even if permanent works* for that purpose were not completed.

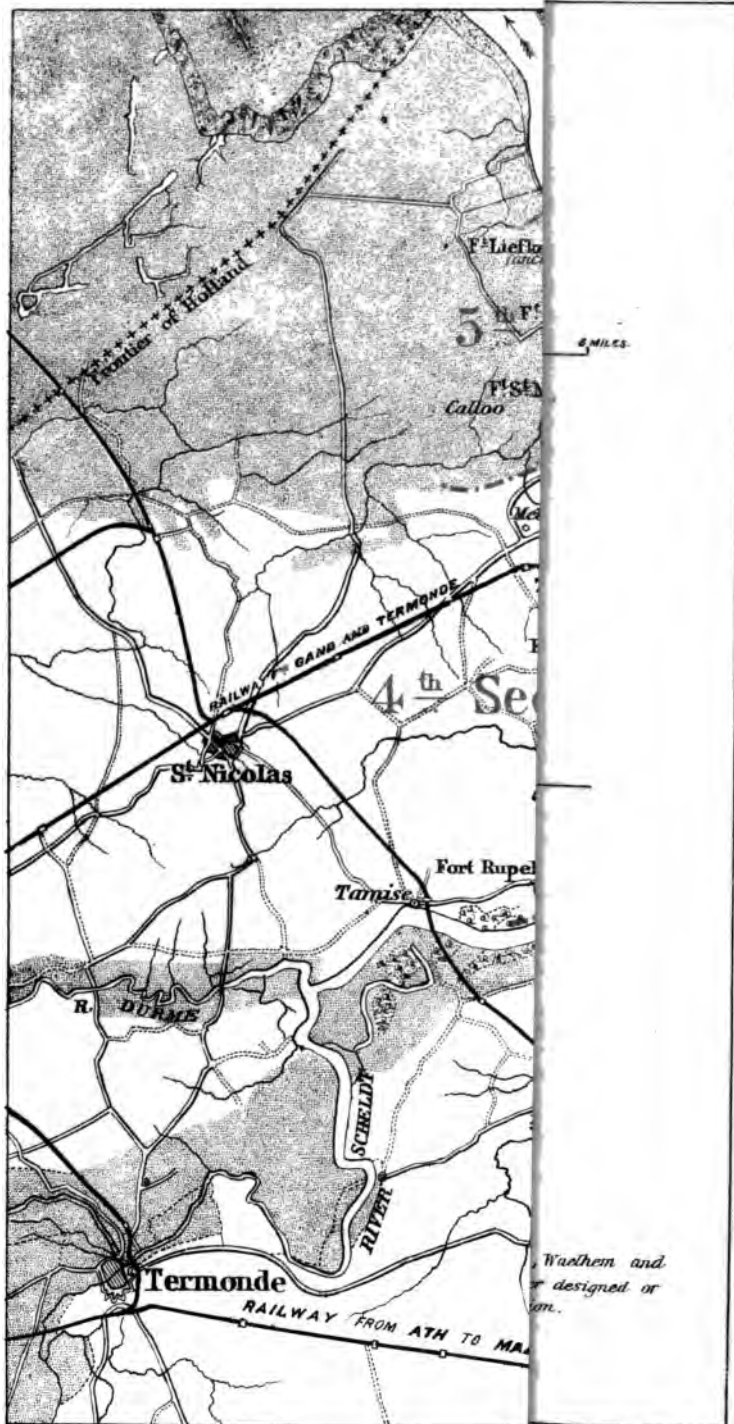
In this way a quadrilateral of 46 miles in perimeter might be formed to the south-east of Antwerp, covered on all sides by accidents of ground offering obstacles to attack. The west side is covered by the Scheldt; the south by the Rupel; the east by the Nethe; and the north by the canal joining the Meuse and Scheldt, and a great number of small lateral streams to the Nethe, which have marshy banks. Three of the angles of the quadrilateral are occupied by Antwerp, Lierre, and Malines; whilst in front of the fourth angle is Termonde.† Their position gives to the above-named towns a great strategical importance, the more so as they are important junctions of lines of railway.

* In the legislative sitting of 28th March, 1878, the Chamber of Representatives voted a special credit of 3,000,000 francs for the construction of two permanent forts in advance of Lierre and Waelhem, on the left bank of the Nethe. Fort Waelhem is completed.

† It has been declared necessary by Government to construct a strong detached fort at Rupelmonde on the left bank of the Scheldt, but the 3,420,000 francs special credit for this work has never been demanded. (“Séance Législative,” 22nd March, 1878.)

‡ The following are the advantages claimed by General Brialmont for the quadrilateral in question:—

- (1.) The army safe behind the Nethe covers the centre of the country, while Malines and Termonde are only distant half a day's march from Brussels, Alost, and Ghent.
- (2.) The young troops will be able to feel the enemy without being committed to an engagement.
- (3.) The General-in-Chief will be able, if necessary, to accept battle without running the risk of having to surrender, or of being cut off from his last resort, Antwerp.
- (4.) In the meantime the Commandant of Antwerp will be able to put the place in a perfect state of defence, and to collect the resources of the rich country to the north of the line Lokeren, Termonde, Malines, Lierre, Herenthals. The principle of an active defence of the Meuse or the Sambre from the commencement of hostilities is absolutely rejected. The following is recommended in preference: Until the general situation becomes defined politically and strategically, the Belgian army should remain on the watch, and not quit its base of operations—Antwerp. *Belgien als Kriegsfeld (Car. v. Widdern).*



Intelligence Dept N° 97.

War Office, Nov. 1881.

Antwerp and Termonde are fortified. Lierre has old works Antwerp, partially demolished, but easy of repair. Malines alone is quite outer line of open. This last fact (Malines undefended) is considered to be defence. a great defect, as an enemy would make this town a "point d'appui" for his attack on the southern and eastern fronts of the intrenched camp.

The Commission of 1852, which was intrusted with the task Malines. of laying down the basis on which the system of defence of Belgium was to rest, unanimously agreed that Malines ought to be protected by field works. As the requisite works for the defence of a position so extended and important would take much time to construct, it is most desirable that measures should be taken in time of peace to secure Malines and Lierre.

Further, Malines is a salient in the line of defence formed by the Nethe and Rupel; suitably guarded, it would prevent the enemy attacking the bridge-heads, which would be thrown up at the last moment near Boom and Duffel; and in conjunction with Lierre and Termonde, would facilitate any offensive movement which the Belgian Army might undertake, on a favourable opportunity, against the enemy's flanks.

Putting the Rupel and the Nethe in a good state of defence, would also in a great measure ensure the safe retreat of a Belgian Army from the frontier to Antwerp.

THE POSITION OF ANTWERP.

The position of Antwerp includes the following works of Entrenched defence:— position of Antwerp.

- a. The continuous enceinte partially covered by the inundation.
- b. The forts of the intrenched camp on the right bank of the Scheldt.
- c. The works on the left bank of the river.
- d. The works which defend the river and the docks.

A. *The Enceinte.*

The enceinte, at a distance of 1,640 to 2,187 yards from Enceinte. the old town, encloses the suburbs of Dambrugge, Saint Wildebrod, Borgerhout, Berchem, and Saint Laurent. It rests on the Scheldt to the north and south, the former flank being terminated by a cupola fort (now in course of erection) for the defence of the reach leading to the docks; and has a total length of $7\frac{1}{8}$ miles, presenting only two prominent salients,—the one near Berchem, the other near Deurne.

The eleven fronts of which the enceinte consists, have each a length of 984 to 1,202 yards; they are not revetted, and are protected by a wet ditch about 66 yards in width. The dispositions for defence have been regulated by a consideration of the difficulties of attack. The four northern fronts, which are protected by inundations from a regular siege, are not so strong as the others. With the exception of a kaponier in the ditch,

Enceinte.

with a parapet for infantry, they have no works in front except a covered way and defensible glacis, and an exterior ditch. The seven other fronts, which it was necessary to construct so as to resist a regular siege, are much stronger. In front of the centre of each of these fronts, and surrounded by water, is a large kaponier with a double tier of casemates, and an upper battery, flanked by low level batteries, and protected in front by a counterguard. The counterguard is protected from the ravelin by a dry ditch, with a "batterie de revers" (casemated) in the salient, and a wet ditch, 55 yards wide. The ravelins in front of the two fronts of Berchem, which from their situation are most exposed to attack, are in the form of lunettes: they are also larger and pushed further to the front than the others. The whole enceinte is surrounded by a covered way, with salient and re-entering places of arms, provided partly with casemated keeps and reverse batteries. In addition, in the centre of six of these fronts are built on the natural earth, defensible barracks for 1,200 men each, with earthen batteries above. At the salients are high cavaliers and traverses of various kinds, for protection against ricochet and enfilade fire.

Northern citadel.

The cupola fort, which is to replace the Northern Citadel, will sweep the Scheldt and the inundations in advance of the northern fronts. It will also allow the garrison to retire to the left bank of the Scheldt, as soon as it is considered necessary to give up the resistance on the right bank, without molestation from the enemy during the retirement. With this view it is proposed, in case of siege, to throw bridges over the Scheldt, between this point and Fort Ste. Marie, at a sufficient distance from the north fronts to prevent the enemy from bringing artillery to bear on the columns during their passage across the river; and to inundate, at the last moment, the ground lying between the citadel and the town. This ground, at high water, is 6 feet 7 inches below the level of the Scheldt; the water for inundation is introduced by the lock which is the means of communication between the Scheldt and the Vosse-Schyn rivulet. The enemy, to follow up the pursuit in a direct line, would be then obliged to force his way past the forts on the north fronts.

The Northern Citadel has five exterior fronts, each 330 to 440 yards in length; the gorge in the form of a tenaille. One of the exterior fronts sweeps the Lower Scheldt, the other commands the anchorage. The other fronts sweep the inundation and the "polders"* of Austruweel and Wilmarsdonck, and also the Scheldt in part. The fronts of the gorge command the neighbouring fronts of the main enceinte. The citadel is surrounded by a broad wet ditch, which communicates with that of the enceinte. The defence of the ditch is by small kaponiers in advance of the salients. In front of the exterior fronts there is also a covered way and ditch.†

* Low lands subject to inundation.

† A Bill has been introduced into the Belgian Chambers for the cession of the

The northern inundation encloses the polders of Wilmarsdonck and Austruweel, and extends to the eastward beyond the Rozendaël (Holland) line of railway. The water of inundation is obtained at high tide from the Scheldt, by means of locks near the Northern Citadel; being in this way carried into the outer ditch, it covers the land, which lies at from 3 feet 3 inches to 9 feet 10 inches above high-water mark. If necessary, the northern inundation might be extended beyond the dyke or embankment of Wilmarsdonck, and very probably to the Dutch frontier.

By diverting the Great and Little Schyn another inundation could be made near Deurne, in advance of the east fronts, which would undoubtedly extend all along these little streams, as far as Wijneghem. This inundation, which would require a particularly high tide, would probably be of little importance.

Lastly, it is possible to spread a small inundation over the polder of Hoboken, in advance of the front which borders the Scheldt, on the south; the water for this inundation would be obtained at high-water from the Scheldt, by means of a lock close by.

B. Intrenched Camp on the Right Bank of the Scheldt.

The intrenched camp which extends to the south and east of Antwerp is covered by nine forts, including that of Merxem on the left flank, still unfinished. These forts are distant from the enceinte 3,300 to 4,400 yards. The villages of Hemixem, Edegheem, Hove, Bouchout, Vremde, and Wijneghem, situated at distances varying from 1,300 to 2,200 yards beyond the forts, prevented their being constructed further to the front, as in that case the efficient action of artillery would have been much obstructed by the villages, while as they exist at present the forts have a range in all directions of 1,300 to 2,300 yards. The only exception is the elevated fort (No. 4) between the Malines and Lierre lines of railway, which is unfavourably situated in this respect, as the village of Moortsel is only 770 yards distant from its front. The extension of the intrenched camp towards the south and east would also have necessitated the construction of a greater number of forts, and would lead to a very great increase of expense, already very considerable.

The distance between two forts, from centre to centre, is on an average 2,000 yards. Between the two northern forts—Fort 1 and that in advance of Merxem—there is a gap of about

terreplein of the Northern Citadel to the town, and the construction on its site of new basins and warehouses. In the original plan of defence, the Northern Citadel played a double part:—

(1.) That of a réduit for the garrison, like the old Southern Citadel. (2.) That of a sea front, to sweep the reach of the Scheldt leading to the docks. The enceinte itself now occupies the position of the réduit since the construction of the detached forts, and the only “raison d’être” of the Northern Citadel is for the second purpose.

The plans drawn up by the War Department include—the establishment of a cupola battery to sweep the Scheldt and inundations, and the junction of the remaining fronts of the citadel with front 1—2 of the enceinte. To construct the new basins and warehouses, the course of the Schyn will have to be diverted.

6,600 yards. To remedy this disadvantage it is intended, in case of war, to throw up field-works to defend the village of Schooten,* which is about midway between the forts.

Flanks.

The fort on the extreme right is on the bank of the Scheldt, that on the extreme left rests on the northern inundation. The nine forts together occupy a line 14 miles in extent.

Description of detached forts.

Each of the forts has an exterior front, two lateral fronts, and a gorge broken outwards, the whole surrounded by a broad wet ditch. The front ditches, and the lateral ditches are flanked by kaponiers; at the gorge is a casemated réduit with dry ditch. Round each of the forts there is in addition a covered way, of which a portion is arranged to receive field artillery. Some of the forts have a command of 33 feet, the advantage of which is, that in selecting their positions, there was no need to restrict the choice to the highest points of ground.

Communication.

In rear of the line of forts and connecting them, is a good paved road, and a circular railway (already finished and working from Fort 4 to Fort 8) will be constructed, connected by three lines with the town.

Auxiliary works.

There is a design also to construct three small redoubts in advance of the fort of Merxem, on the dyke of Wilmarsdonck. These will sweep the northern inundation, in conjunction with Fort Merxem and Fort St. Philippe, and will prevent the enemy from getting at the town by crossing the inundation in boats.

C. Works on the Left Bank of the Scheldt.

Works on the left bank of the Scheldt.

The ground immediately opposite the town, close to the anchorage of the Scheldt, as well as the lands lying on the river banks more to the north, are of sufficiently low level to be inundated with ease, either by opening the locks or by cutting the dykes. As the ground to the south, between the villages of Burght and Melsele, rises rapidly, and as on the other hand the chance of bombardment of the town, and especially the port, from this side must be admitted, it is evident that to defend the left bank, the old fort near the Scheldt at the "tête-de-Flandre"† was insufficient. Two new forts (Cruybeke and Zwyndrecht) have therefore been built in advance of the villages Burght and Zwyndrecht; they are connected by a defensible dyke with Fort Ste. Marie, which is on the bank of the river behind the village of Calloo. Fort Ste. Marie thus forms the "point d'appui" of the right of the intrenched camp on the left bank, and contributes at the same time to the defence of the stream; it has recently undergone important alterations which are not yet complete. The forts in advance of Burght and Zwyndrecht, and the defensible dyke are also unfinished. These forts

* It is most probable that Government will bring in a Bill for the erection in advance of Schooten of a fort equal in strength to those of Lierre and Waelhem, to fill up the gap now existing between Fort 1, called Fort Wyneghem, and Fort Merxem.

† Declassed 1881.

on the left bank which make the circumference of the detached works up to a total of 28 miles, are at a distance of about 7,150 yards from the west side of the town. Works on the left bank of the Scheldt.

The defensible dyke is to serve also as a "chaussée d'inondation" so as to leave intact the polders of Melsele and Borgerwert, which have a superficial area of something over a mile square: the object being to enclose on the left bank a tract of land suitable for the cattle required for the food of the army and inhabitants, and also for encamping a portion of the defending troops. A railway is to be constructed along the inner side of the dyke.

The fortified camp on the left bank of the Scheldt gives to the central "réduit" of Antwerp a fresh value strategically. It will allow the garrison to operate on either bank, and to cover its communications with Termonde, as well as with the rich country of Waes; it makes defence possible after the fall of the works on the right bank, and facilitates the junction of an English, Dutch, or French army of relief with the Belgian army concentrated in the position.

D. Works for defending the Stream.

The defences of the stream below the town consisted formerly of Forts Lillo and Liefkenshoek; the batteries of La Perle and Ste. Marie, higher up in the reach of Calloo; and Fort Philippe opposite Calloo on the right bank. Works for defending the stream. These works were sufficient to stop the approach of wooden sailing vessels, but they were entirely inadequate to cope with iron-clad fleets and steamers, against the advance of which it is necessary to provide by concentrating the fire on one point. Fort Lillo and Liefkenshoek have therefore been given up, and great improvements have been made to the works at Calloo. The river-side battery Ste. Marie is turned into a fort with a Grûsen armour-plated battery to be armed with six 24-centimètre guns bearing on the pass, and a battery of lighter guns to be used against small craft seeking to remove or damage the barricade. Fort Philippe is now a cupola fort completed, armed with heavy guns, and in working order; La Perle, also a cupola fort, is in an unfinished state. In addition, it is intended in time of war to barricade the stream between Ste. Marie and St. Philippe, while a river-side battery would be thrown up between Ste. Marie and La Perle. The forts in advance of Hoboken and Burght (Fort 8, right bank, and Cruybeke, left bank) are destined for the defence of the Scheldt above the town; it is proposed also to barricade the stream in time of war opposite Fort Burght.*

E. Garrison and Armament.

The normal garrison of each of the detached forts consists of 1 battalion of Infantry, and 2 siege batteries.

* Declassed 1881.

Each detached fort will afford shelter temporarily to 4 battalions, and 2 field batteries.

Barracks, &c. Within the enceinte there are a great number of bomb-proof buildings; defensible barracks capable of holding 3,000 men each in time of war; two barracks for 2,000 men beneath the ramparts; an arsenal, and bake-houses to supply the wants of an army of 100,000 men; a pyrotechnical establishment; a great number of sheds; and two barracks for the special companies of Artillery and Engineers.

Line of investment. The line of investment at 3 kilos. (nearly 2 miles) from the forts would have a length of 68 kilos. (42 miles), including 26 kilos. (16 miles) on the left bank. This at $2\frac{1}{2}$ men per running metre would give 176,000 as the strength of the blockading army.

When the outer line of defence (Lierre, Waelhem, Duffel) is complete, the line of blockade will be 106 kilos. (66 miles), including 26 kilos. (16 miles on left bank), and on the same calculation would require an army of 265,000 men for the purposes of blockade.

According to the report of the Commission of 1867, the enceinte of Antwerp and the eight then existing forts would require a garrison of 33,422 men. The conditions are a good deal altered since then.

Other Forts and Fortresses.

Termonde. (1.) The fortress of *Termonde* (9,000 inhabitants), at the confluence of the Dendre and the Scheldt, consists of two parts, viz., the bastioned enceinte of the town on the right bank, and a small tenaille "tête-de-pont" on the left bank of the Scheldt. It may be surrounded by an inundation, which would not, however, in any case extend far to the south. On the left bank of the Scheldt, between the road to Hamme and the line of railway to Lokeren, the ground is left dry, so as not entirely to prevent approach of the Belgian troops from that side. If we recall the important rôle which has been assigned to this fortress (*vide supra*, p. 89), Termonde has great defects. First, want of space would prevent the assembly of any considerable force; and secondly, the total absence of detached works prevents the offer of efficient shelter to troops retreating, or the resumption of the offensive on favourable terms. Termonde has but one exterior work; it consists of an elevated lunette on the right bank, which protects the railway station. The bridge-head on the left bank only covers the gorge of the place and the bridge over the Scheldt in a very incomplete manner. If it were desired to give to Termonde the attributes of a fortress of offence, it would be necessary to construct detached forts on both banks of the Scheldt.

(2.) The small fortress of *Diest* (8,000 inhabitants) is astride the river Demer, and forms a double "tête-de-pont" at that point. It was completed in 1838 (when the political situation seemed to point to a Dutch invasion), and comprises a bastioned

enceinte with wet ditches, some exterior works on the eastern Diest, and southern fronts, a citadel in advance of the west front, and a small battery (Fort Leopold) in advance of the north front.

The fortress of Diest could not hold out for any length of time; it is entirely commanded by the citadel, the trace of which is defective, as it does not completely sweep the ground in front, and is dominated by five or six neighbouring heights.

(3.) *The frontier forts of the Meuse are the citadel and La Liège, Chartreuse, near Liège, and the citadel of Namur.*

The citadel of Liège is on the left bank, and that of *La Chartreuse* on the right bank; the former has an elevation of 367 feet, the latter of 344 feet above the level of the Meuse; they are seen into from the surrounding heights.

The citadel of Namur is situated to the south of the town Namur, on the plateau between the Meuse and Sambre. None of these three works satisfies the conditions required at the present day in frontier or delaying forts.

To the above may be added the *fortress of Huy* (also on Huy, the Meuse), which, although dismantled, is admirably planned, in good order, and easily armed.

CHAPTER IX.

MILITARY EXPENDITURE.

Pay, Allowances, and Deductions from Pay of Officers and Men.

PAY, &c.

THE Royal Decree of 18th October, 1875, fixed the annual Rates of pay. pay of officers and employés civil and military; the daily pay of sub-officers and soldiers and other allowances for the personnel of the army and the gendarmerie.

An examination of these different rates shows that they are not arranged on any particular basis. Officers' pay, Appendix II.

In comparing the pay of Belgian officers with those of other nations, it is evident that the Belgian officer's is, relatively speaking, low. A captain commanding a company in Belgium receives only 3,150 francs (£126) per annum, while in Germany the pay of the company chief is 5,000 francs (£200).

Deductions are made from officers' pay for medicines, for the widows and orphans' fund, for the chief part of their uniform, and for the band. The sub-officers and soldiers' pay for their clothing by a deduction of 42 centimes (4d.) a day for sub-officers, and 30 centimes (3d.) for corporals and soldiers.

The state furnishes the equipment and armament. Messes Messes.

Messes, &c. (*ménages*) have been established for sub-officers and soldiers. The officers dine generally at an hotel. There are two tables—one for lieutenants and sub-lieutenants, the other for unmarried captains and field officers. No officers' mess exists except for officers of the garrison of Brussels; at the same time it is probable that in the new barracks places will be set apart for a mess room in the other great garrisons. Officers' quarters will also be built.

Allowances in the field.

In war time the pay remains the same; sub-officers receive an allowance of 8 centimes a day. Officers receive the number of rations of forage and field rations fixed by the above decree. Field rations can be drawn in money or kind.

At the time of the mobilisation of 1870 the field allowance was paid in arrears and in unequal parts. The regulations do not lay down the rate of the allowance.

By the law of 22nd June, 1875, it was decreed that the troops should in future be lodged at the expense of the State.

Military beds.

Military beds are furnished in part by the "Société des Lits Militaires," and in part by the State and communes.

Rations in the field.

In war time rations are assured by an extraordinary contract or by the military Intendance. During the mobilisation of 1870-71 the feeding was sometimes imperfect, and the troops suffered from hunger in their own country. This was owing to the inexperience and insufficiency of the personnel of the Intendance, and to want of organisation of transport by railway, as well as from the powerlessness of commanding officers to make requisitions.

War Budget.

The WAR BUDGET is voted annually by the Chambers under the two headings—

- (1.) Ordinary and Permanent Charges,
- (2.) Extraordinary and Temporary Charges.

e.g.—WAR Minister's Budget for Financial Year 1881.

Articles.	Designation of Expenses and Services.	Charges.		Total.
		Ordinary and Permanent.	Extraordinary and Temporary.	
		£ s.	£ s.	£ s.
	CHAPTER 1.			
	<i>Central Administration.</i>			
1	Minister's pay.. ..	840 0	..	19,280 0
2	Pay of civil functionaries ..	8,000 0	..	
3	Additional pay of officers employed in War Department.	640 0	..	
4	Matériel	2,200 0	..	
5	"Dépôt de la Guerre" and Military Cartographical Institute	1,600 0	6,000 0	
	Carried forward	13,280 0	6,000 0	19,280 0

WAR MINISTER'S Budget, &c.—*continued.*

Articles.	Designation of services and expenses.	Charges.		Total.
		Ordinary and Permanent.	Extraordinary and Temporary.	
	Brought forward	£ 13,280 s. 0	£ 6,000 s. 0	£ 19,280 s. 0
	CHAPTER 2.			
	<i>Staffs.</i>			
6	Pay of General Staff	35,840 0	..	} 56,921 0
7	Pay of Staff of Provinces and garrison towns	10,761 0	..	
8	Pay of Intendance	10,320 0	..	
	CHAPTER 3.			
	<i>Hospital Medical Service.</i>			
9	Pay of medical officers	12,088 0	..	} 46,088 0
10	Feeding and clothing sick, and maintenance of hospitals	26,600 0	..	
11	Pharmaceutical service	7,400 0	..	
	CHAPTER 4.			
	<i>Pay of Troops.</i>			
12	Pay of officers and men of Infantry	540,980 0	..	} 983,160 0
13	Pay of officers and men of Cavalry	150,840 0	..	
14	Pay of officers and men of Artillery	212,240 0	..	
15	Pay of officers and men of Engineers	51,984 0	..	
16	Pay of officers of Battalion of Administration	27,116 0	..	
	CHAPTER 5.			
	<i>Military Academy.</i>			
17	"Personnel" of Military school and War school	9,844 0	..	} 11,056 0
18	Expenses of administration	1,712 0	..	
	CHAPTER 6.			
	<i>Artillery Matériel and Establishments.</i>			
19	Pay of personnel of establishments	2,655 0	..	} 44,802 4
20	Artillery matériel	41,647 4	..	
	CHAPTER 7.			
	<i>Engineer Matériel.</i>			
21	Engineer matériel	58,400 0	..	58,400 0
	Carried forward	£233,207 4	6,000 0	1,219,207 4

WAR Minister's Budget, &c.—*continued.*

Articles.	Designation of Services and Expenses.	Charges.		Total.
		Ordinary and Permanent.	Extraordinary and Temporary.	
	Brought forward.. ..	£ 233,207 4	£ 6,000 0	£ 1,219,207 4
	CHAPTER 8. <i>Bread, Meat, Forage, and other Charges.</i>			
22	Bread and meat	272,112 0	..	540,112 0
23	Forage in kind	189,252 0	..	
24	Barrack accommodation for men	28,520 0	..	
25	Renewing accoutrements and harness	4,000 0	..	
26	Travelling and lodging allowance	4,400 0	..	
27	General transport	3,800 0	..	
28	Fuel and light for guard rooms.. ..	4,720 0	..	
29	Remounts	33,308 0	..	
	CHAPTER 9. <i>Honorary Pay and other Items.</i>			
30	Honorary pay, &c.	5,800 0	..	6,600 0
31	Ceremonials	800 0	..	
	CHAPTER 10. <i>Pensions and Charity.</i>			
32	Pensions and charity	5,378 8	21 12	5,400 0
	CHAPTER 11. <i>Unforeseen Expenses.</i>			
33	Unforeseen expenses not mentioned in the Budget ..	597 16	..	597 16
	General Total of Budget ..	£1,765,895 8	6,021 12	1,771,917 0

For Tables of pay of all ranks and branches of the service, and office allowances, see Appendix II.

Subsistence. Men subsisted for any time by a regiment of another branch of the service are counted, as regards all allowances, with the corps with which they are rationed.

Detachments. When six men or more leave the garrison on duty for another locality they form a detachment. If fewer than six they receive travelling allowance (*solde de route*).

"Miliciens." "Miliciens" of all ranks travelling in detachment en route to the dépôt, or when dismissed on furlough, are entitled to 2*d.* a day, and are billeted on the inhabitants. Men on leave, of all

ranks, quitting such a detachment receive 1·5 fr. (1s. 3d.) travelling allowance.

Ordinary deductions of pay are—1st, rations; 2nd, clothing fund; 3rd, when billeted. Ordinary Deductions.

Extraordinary deductions are for :—

1st. Selling, loss or destruction of clothing or equipment, either voluntarily or through negligence. Extraordinary deductions.

2nd. Habitual drunkenness (during the whole time of deprivation of privilege of carrying arms).

3rd. Sentence by court-martial or civil court.

4th. Illegal absence.

5th. Causing damage, or riotous behaviour.

6th. Making good petty thefts in barracks.

7th. Losing or spoiling barrack furniture.

8th. Damage to others or to the State.

Extraordinary deductions for sub-officers are 0·30 fr. (3d.) per day. For corporals, 0·15 fr. (1½d.) per day. For soldiers deductions vary according to circumstances. They may not receive less than 0·05 fr. (½d.) per day. Every commander of a detachment has the power to direct deductions to be made.

Sub-officers promoted sub-lieutenants in the Cavalry and Field Batteries, after having served in the corps exclusively for at least four years before their promotion to the rank of officer, are entitled to two horses selected from the troop horses of the regiment. Promotion of sub-officers in mounted corps.

Sub-officers promoted sub-lieutenants in the Battalion of the Train, are entitled, under the same conditions, to one horse selected from the troop horses of the Field Artillery.

The students of the military school appointed sub-lieutenants in the Cavalry or Field Batteries are entitled to two horses selected from the troop horses of Regiments of Cavalry or Field Artillery, if they have served in these regiments for at least two years before entering the school. Students of military school on appointment to mounted corps.

Forage rations in ordinary times consist of the following :— Forage.

—	Full ration.	Mixed ration.	Light ration.
Oats	10 lbs. (4½ kilos.)	10 lbs. (4½ kilos.)	9 lbs. (4 kilos.)
Hay	9 lbs. (4 kilos.)	7½ lbs. (3½ kilos.)	7½ lbs. (3½ kilos.)
Straw	9 lbs. (4 kilos.)	9 lbs. (4 kilos.)	9 lbs. (4 kilos.)

The Minister may make what changes he thinks proper in the composition of forage rations.

The full ration is issued for—

Officers' and troop horses in—

Regiments of Guides.

Regiments of Field Artillery.

Battalion of Train.

Officers' horses in—

Regiments of "chasseurs-à-cheval" and lancers.

Siege artillery regiments.

Full ration of forage.

Full ration of forage.	Artillery pontoon company. Troop horses of corps of Gendarmerie.
Mixed ration.	The mixed ration is issued for— Troop horses of lancer regiments.
Light ration.	The light ration is issued for— Troop horses of regiments of chasseurs.

Allowances.

Officers, sub-officers, and soldiers taking part in the Staff tours (*voyages d'état-major*) made by students of the War School receive the following allowances:—

	£	s.	d.	
Field Officer	5	12	0	} For the whole period.
Captain	4	0	0	
Lieutenant and Sub-lieutenant	3	4	0	

Sub-officers, 5*d.* a day; corporal, trumpeter, and soldier, 2½*d.* a day. These allowances are charged under pay in the Budget.

Except when it is absolutely impossible, warrant officers of Artillery and Engineers are to have free quarters in Government buildings instead of finding their own lodgings.

Lodging allowance to "gardes" of artillery and engineers.

When lodging cannot be provided for them they receive lodging allowance as follows:—

					Yearly.		
					£		
"Garde" of Artillery.	{	Principal	32	} Paid out of budget allowance for "matériel" of Artillery.
		1st Class	..	..	..	24
		2nd "	..	..	..	20
		3rd "	..	..	..	16
"Garde" of Engineers.	{	Principal	{ 1st Class	32	} Paid out of allowance for "matériel" of Engineers.
			2nd "	..	..	28
		1st Class	..	..	..	24
		2nd "	..	..	..	20
		3rd "	16	

Quarters for officers of administration.

Officers of administration are entitled to quarters in the establishment to which they are attached.

When quarters cannot be provided for them officers of administration receive a lodging allowance as follows:—

					£	
Officer of administration.	{	1st Class..	..	..	..	28
		2nd „	..	..	..	24
		3rd „	..	..	..	20
		4th „	..	..	..	16
						} These are charged in budget to the general expenses of the establishment.

Additional allowance to officers and soldiers employed in aid of the civil power.

Officers, sub-officers, and soldiers employed out of their garrisons for more than 24 hours, *for the public safety*, receive additional pay as follows, from the day following their departure up to and inclusive of the day before the troops commence the march back to their garrison:—

		s.	d.	
Field Officer of all arms		4	2	a day.
Officer below the rank of Field Officer		2	6	"
Sub-officer .. {	Gendarmerie	0	10	"
	Other arms	0	5	"

Corporal	{	Gendarmerie	0	8	a day.	Allowances when employed in aid of civil power.
		Other arms .. ..	..	..	..	0	4	"
		Gendarmerie .. ..	..	..	..	0	6	"
		Other arms .. ..	..	..	..	0	3	"

The above allowances are charged in the Budget under pay of the various arms. The additional allowance to sub-officers is paid to them in full; that of other ranks is subject to a deduction for the clothing fund fixed at three-fifths the extra allowance for corporals, and one-half for buglers, trumpeters, and soldiers.

Officers belonging to troops at camps of instruction in time of peace, receive an allowance of 40 centimes (4*d.*) a day for each ration they are entitled to. Allowance in lieu of field rations.

An allowance may be granted to officers of corps in which the men are quartered on the inhabitants on a footing of concentration, at the rate of 40 centimes (4*d.*) for each field ration to which they are by rank entitled.

This allowance of 40 centimes (4*d.*) for each ration is also allowed in camp to the following: Chaplains, warrant officers of Engineers, clerks of the Administration Battalion, and conductors of Artillery Staff.

Sub-officers and soldiers of corps which are assembled each year at Beverloo camp and the practice ground at Brasschaet, during periods of manoeuvres, instruction and musketry, draw an allowance of 3*d.* for every day they are present following the day after their arrival at the camp or practice ground up to and inclusive of *the day before* they leave. Allowance to troops in camp.

This indemnity is also allowed under special orders from the War Minister to troops occupying unhealthy garrisons either permanently or temporarily.

Sub-officers and soldiers awarded good-conduct badges (*chevrons*) receive extra pay as follows:— Extra pay for good conduct badges.

8 years' service: 1 chevron .. ..	..	..	..	0½	a day
12 " 2 chevrons .. ..	..	..	..	1	"
16 " 3 " .. ..	..	..	..	1½	"

Allowances to Soldiers acquitted by Courts-martial or Civil Courts:— Allowances to soldiers acquitted by courts-martial or civil courts.

Adjutant Sub-officer .. ..	..	..	..	6½	a day.
Battery Adjutant, Serjeant-Major, or Squadron	{	..	..	5½	"
Serjeant-Major .. ..		..	..	4½	"
Serjeant.. ..	..	..	..	3½	"
Corporal.. ..	..	..	..	3	"
Soldier, trumpeter, or bugler .. ..	..	..	..	1½	"

Hospital Pay is as follows:—

Hospital pay.

Adjutant Sub-officer .. ..	..	..	..	6	"
Battery Adjutant, Serjeant-Major, or Squadron	{	..	..	4	"
Serjeant-Major .. ..		..	..	3	"
Serjeant.. ..	..	..	..	1	"
Corporal and trumpeter .. ..	..	..	..	0½	"
Soldier and bugler .. ..	..	..	..	0½	"

Soldiers receive additional pay, at the rate of 4*d.* a day, without respect to rank or branch of the service, and dating Soldiers on board ship.

from the day of embarkation, up to and inclusive of the day preceding disembarkation.

Pay of "miliciens" of the new levy, and men on furlough composing portion of a detachment.

"Miliciens" of the new levy proceeding to join, and "miliciens" on unlimited or long furlough recalled to the colours draw—from the day they are assembled in detachments to join their corps, and without respect to the corps to which they belong—a lump sum of 2*d.* every day during which they may have been billeted on the inhabitants. The day of their arrival with their corps these "miliciens" are borne on the returns for the usual allowances of pay, clothing, bread, and meat.

"Miliciens" in activity, who are sent on unlimited or long furlough, also receive when assembled in detachment, and without respect to the arm to which they belong, a sum of 2*d.* for every day during which they are travelling and receiving food and lodging, up to and inclusive of the day of their arrival at the chief town of the *arrondissement*, where their certificate of furlough (*cartouche*) is delivered to them. These men receive the usual marching pay of soldiers for the day on which the furlough paper is delivered to them.

Infantry drivers' pay.

Soldiers employed as drivers in regiments of infantry, receive additional daily pay up to the rate of soldiers of the artillery train, viz., 2½*d.*

Infantry drivers and civilian servants.

Soldiers employed as drivers and civilian servants of officers, not with troops, receive daily pay at the rate of 7½*d.* (not including clothing).

Allowance for wagons and bât animals.
Billeting.

	£	s.	d.	
For a four-horse wagon	2	0	0	per month.
„ two-horse „	1	8	0	„
„ bât horse „	0	6	8	„
Allowance to commence when troops are lodged and fed by inhabitants.. .. .	0	1	0½	daily.
Allowance to communes when troops are lodged only	0	0	2	„

Regimental bands.

The annual allowance to the Band Fund is £320, which is to be included in the general quarterly statement of accounts.

Requisitioned transport.

TRANSPORT that may be requisitioned by Corps and Detachments for Troops on the March.

	Number of carriages.	
	One horse.	Two horses.
INFANTRY, SIEGE BATTÉRIES, AND ENGINEERS.		
Staff of a regiment	2	1
„ battalion	2	1
A battalion without Staff—800 to 1,000 men	9	6
„ „ 600 „ 800 „	8	5
„ „ 400 „ 600 „	6	4
„ „ 200 „ 400 „	4	3
„ „ under 200 „	4	3
A detachment from 100 to 200 men.. .. .	3	2
„ „ 25 „ 100 „	1	..
„ „ under 25 men.. .. .	..	..

TRANSPORT that may be requisitioned by Corps and Detach- Requisitioned
ments for Troops on the March—*continued.* transport.

	Number of carriages.	
	One horse.	Two horses.
CAVALRY, HORSE, AND MOUNTED BATTERIES.		
Staff of a regiment	2	1
One or two squadrons or batteries marching with or without Staff of Corps	2	1
Three or four squadrons or batteries marching with or without Staff of Corps	4	2
Squadrons or batteries without Staff—800 to 1,000 men ..	12	8
" 600 " 800 " ..	9	6
" 400 " 600 " ..	8	5
" 200 " 400 " ..	6	4
" under 200 " ..	6	4
A detachment of 100 to 200 men	4	3
" 50 " 100 "	2	1
" 25 " 50 "	1	1
" under 25 men	1	1

Allowances to be paid to communes for transport as above, Allowances
are fixed as follows:— for transport
to civil power.

For a cart or carriage harnessed { With 2 horses 2s. 8d. per league of 5,000 mètres (3 miles
190 yards).
With 1 horse 1s. 10d. per league of 5,000 mètres (3 miles
190 yards).

Nothing to be paid for the return journey.

Tolls for water passage over rivers or State canals, are half Tolls.
those paid by private persons.

Barrier rights and others on highways, canals, bridges, &c.,
belonging to private individuals, are to be paid as laid down in
the contract.

TABLE of Daily Pay and various Allowances to Sub-Officers and Soldiers of Belgian Infantry (in francs).

Ranks.	Pay.	Deductions.	Travelling allowance.	Hospital pay.	Detention pay (in case of recall).	Embarkation pay.	Chevrons.	Military decoration.	Cross of the Order of Leopold.	Daily extra-pay of "bounty volunteers."	Daily working pay.		Allowance to troops employed out of garrison with a view to the security of State railways.	Observations.
											Summer.	Winter.		
Adjutant Sub-Officer..	2.50	0.75	3.50	0.60	0.63	0.42	For 1st Chevron (8 years' service)... 0.05 " 2nd "							

[For tables of Pay of all Ranks and all Arms, see Appendix II.]

CHAPTER X.

Clothing—Equipment—Small-arms—Small-arm Ammunition.

CLOTHING.

THE colour of the Belgian uniform is dark blue.

The Infantry, Train, and Engineers, wear the tunic: the Clothing. Cavalry the dolman, and the Artillery the jacket (*habit*). The head-dress consists of the shako for Infantry, the cap (*chapeau*) for the Carabineers, the bear-skin (*bonnet à poil*) for the Grenadiers, the bushy for Field Artillery, and the lancer cap for the Lancers.

Mounted troops wear the cloak with moveable cape: foot soldiers the "capote," or greatcoat with hood.

The distinguishing colours for the various branches are: Infantry, scarlet; Carabineers and Chasseurs-à-pied, yellow; Engineers, black; the Train and Administrative Battalion, sky-blue; Guides and 1st Regiment of Lancers, magenta; 2nd Regiment of Chasseurs, 1st Regiment of Chasseurs, and 2nd Regiment of Lancers, white; 4th Regiment of Lancers, sky-blue.

Trowsers for Infantry are blue; grey (*gris belge*) for Carabineers and Chasseurs; grey (*gris marengo*) for Grenadiers, Artillery, and Battalion of Administration; blue for Engineers; magenta for the Guides, and blue for the rest of the Cavalry.

The distinctive marks of rank are by lace stripes on the sleeves of the inferior grades. Officers of Infantry and Engineers wear the epaulette and distinctive stars of grades on the collar. Officers of Grenadiers wear in addition "fourragères," or shoulder-cords. Officers of Carabineers, Chasseurs-à-pied, and Intendance do not wear the epaulette: their only marks of distinction are the "fourragères," or shoulder-cords, and stars on the collar. In the Cavalry, the ranks are distinguished by braiding on the sleeves of the dolman. The Artillery have epaulettes and "fourragères" of gold. Distinctive marks of rank for Officers.

The sash is the distinctive mark of duty for officers of the Infantry, Engineers, and the Intendance: in the Artillery and Train, officers on duty wear the shoulder-belt.

General officers wear epaulettes on parade, and in undress (*tenue de service*) stars on the collar, and gold shoulder-straps.

Rank is indicated in a general manner on the forage cap for all officers.

Each infantry soldier is supplied with a shako, forage cap, Infantry tunic, jacket, great coat, pair of cloth trowsers, pair of canvas soldiers' trousers, two pairs of boots, and a knapsack, round which his clothing. blanket is rolled in a horse-shoe form on going on service.

On the back of the pack is placed a white metal canteen holding about 2 litres (3·52 pints), in which is placed the mess

bowl (similar to the French, but flattened on one side), cup and spoon. A glass water bottle covered with tarred linen and holding about a litre (1.76 pints) is worn by the side, held by a thin cord. The Belgian soldier carries only one pouch, which is worn in front.

Infantry
soldiers'
equipment.

His body linen and linings of his clothes are made of twilled cotton (*cretonne*), which washes better than cotton and wears well. In addition to the articles carried by French soldiers, the Belgian has two pairs of socks and two towels. Non-commissioned officers have a second tunic in place of a jacket.

Belts are white, with the exception of those of rifles and chasseurs-à-pied, which are black. The pouch is of black leather. The edges of the knapsack are bound with black leather for the Rifles, Chasseurs, and Battalion of Administration; and edged with yellow leather for the rest of the Infantry, the Engineers, and Siege Artillery.

Allowances
for outfit on
joining and
on contracting
an engage-
ment.

On joining the army soldiers are granted an allowance, varying according to the branch of the service, to cover the expenses of outfit.

The allowance for clothing and outfit to each recruit, and to each man below the rank of sub-officer, who, at the expiration of his engagement, contracts a new one, is fixed for all arms as follows:—

	Troops.		
	Dis- mounted.	Mounted.	Battalion of ad- ministration.
	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
For the men of the new levy called up under arms	1 9 0	2 0 0	0 12 0
For men admitted to the service on an engagement of 8 years	1 9 0	2 0 0	0 12 0
For men admitted to the service on an engagement of 6 years	1 9 0	2 0 0	0 12 0
For men admitted to the service on an engagement of 4 years	1 2 0	1 12 0	0 10 0
For men admitted to the service on an engagement of 2 years	0 11 0	0 16 0	0 5 0
For men admitted to the service on a re-engagement of 2 years, when the army is on war footing, or for the time during which the army is continued on a war footing	1 9 0	2 0 0	0 12 0
For men who contract an engagement of 6 years	1 9 0	2 0 0	0 12 0
For men who contract an engagement of 4 years	1 2 0	1 12 0	0 10 0
For men who contract an engagement of 2 years	0 11 0	0 16 0	0 5 0

Men passing from dismounted to mounted troops, have the right to an increase of 14 francs (11s.) for first outfit allowance,

TABLE showing the description and number of Articles of Clothing and Equipment with which every Sub-officer or Soldier should be provided.

[illegible]

* In the cavalry sub-officers have two dolmans. † Sub-officers do not wear the shell jacket.
 ‡ Sub-officers of infantry and sub-officers and trumpeters of foot artillery have only one pair of boots.
 § In the infantry and foot artillery for sub-officers and trumpeters only.
 ¶ Braces are not obligatory for corps in which trowers have an interior band of leather.
 ** In the infantry for sub-officers only: the carabinieri have no sword-knot.
 *** Drivers of artillery have two. †† Four brushes for horse artillery.
 §§ In the infantry for sub-officers and buglers only; and in the artillery for mounted men, and for sub-officers and trumpeters of siege batteries.
 §§§ The large and small haversacks now in store will be issued until they are exhausted, at rates of year 1880.

without reference to the number of years they have still to serve.

The "miliciens" of the old reserve contingent,* who pass to the active contingent or contract a voluntary engagement, receive also an increase to first outfit allowance of 11 francs (9s.).

Outfit allowance to Gendarmerie.

Men admitted to the corps of gendarmerie are entitled to a first outfit allowance for clothing and equipment, as follows:—

Those admitted to mounted gendarmerie	..	..	fr. 400 (£16).
„	dismounted	„	.. .. 150 (£6).

Dismounted gendarmes passing to the mounted branch are entitled to an increase of 250 francs (£10) for first allowance, without reference to the number of years they may have still to serve.

Allowance for keeping up belts, &c.

The following sums are allowed to each sub-officer and gendarme present under arms up to 31st December, 1881:—

Sub-officers and gendarme	{	mounted ..	..	..	2 frs.
		dismounted	..	..	1 fr.

for keeping up his belts, which are provided by the State. This allowance is placed to the credit of the necessary and reserve funds of those concerned.

The allowance to be granted to troops of the regular army for keeping up belts and harness is not yet fixed.

Regimental allowance for administration and instruction.

The sums allowed to regiments for administration and instruction purposes, are fixed as follows, viz.:—

Rifle regiment .. .. .	..	..	..	fr. 16,000	£640
Each regiment of Infantry Grenadiers, or	..	..	..	14,500	580
Chasseurs-à-pied .. .. .	..	..	..	400	16
Invalid company .. .. .	..	..	..	5,300	212
Corps of discipline and correction .. ..	..	..	..	7,200	288
Each regiment of Cavalry .. .. .	..	..	..	9,000	360
Each regiment of Artillery .. .. .	..	..	..	300	12
Each special company of Artillery, Pontoniers, Artillery artisans, Armourers, and Artificers }	..	..	..	5,600	224
Battalion of the train .. .. .	..	..	..	14,500	580
Regiment of Engineers and special companies ..	..	..	..	5,000	200
Battalion of Administration .. .. .	..	..	..

Stable fund.

The allowance for keeping up harness, treatment and shoeing of horses of mounted troops (called the stable-fund) is fixed uniformly at 9 centimes per horse per day.

Allowances to sub-officers for outfit on promotion.

Sub-officers promoted to the rank of sub-lieutenant receive an allowance on account of first outfit as follows:—

On appointment to the Infantry, Engineers, Battalion of Administration, and Staff of garrison towns .. .. .	..	..	..	..	fr. 400 (£16).
On appointment to Cavalry, Artillery, Battalion of the Train and Gendarmerie.. .. .	..	..	..	..	500 (£20).

* Abolished in the year 1873.

Field equip-
ment.

On the 2nd July, 1877, a sum of 100,000 francs was allowed for the purchase of camp equipment for the infantry, but this arm is still furnished with the old pattern shovels.

In ministerial explanatory circular of 10th August, 1877, fresh instructions were issued for the inspection of the armament of the troops. These inspections are principally for the object of seeing the state of repair of the armament, the principal causes of wear and tear, and the manner in which the armourers do their work.

Field equip-
ment.

FIELD Camp Equipment per Company.

			Shovels.	Pickaxes.	Axes.	Saws.	Bill-hooks.	Pots.	Cans.
Peace	..	..	3	3	6	3	3	12	12
War	..	..	30	6	12	3	9	12	12

Field service.

Field Service.

Articles given
into store.

When going on service the soldier gives into store the following articles:—

Jacket.
Busby-bag (in the Artillery).
Bag for tunic.
Third shirt.
Second pair of linen trousers.
Second towel and basin.

Boots.

He is to be in possession of complete kit and two pairs of boots in a good state of repair.

Field rations
in 1870.

Field Rations (fixed each time by Royal decree) in 1870.

750 grammes (1·66 lb.) bread or 500 grammes of biscuit.
300 grammes (·66 lb.) or 200 grammes of preserved meat,
or 300 grammes of bacon.
30 grammes of rice, 16 grammes of salt, 16 grammes of
coffee, 5 centilitres (about half a wine-glassful) of
gin, $\frac{1}{300}$ stère (·117 cubic foot of firewood).

Other portions of rations—vegetables, salt, &c., are purchased at the expense of the men; the ration of gin may be replaced by addition to pay.

No. of Field and Camp Rations.					Number of rations allowed in the field.
Colonel of regiment.	Lieutenant-Colonel and Major.	Captain and subaltern officers.	Men, women, servants, and civilians.	Value of one ration.	
4	3	1½	1	fr. 0·40	

Reserve rations in knapsack and in battalion cart (latter still under consideration) :— Reserve rations.

Reserve ration, biscuit 700 grammes (4 biscuits.)

Preserved meat, 250 grammes.

Coffee, 16 grammes.

Chicory, 10 grammes.

Salt, 16 grammes.

Rice, 30 grammes.

In soldiers' knapsack, 2 rations, each in a metal box.

In the battalion cart, 1,800 rations.

SMALL ARMS AND AMMUNITION.

Mounted Troops.

Guides and Chasseurs-à-cheval.—The men are armed with the Comblain carbine (1871), and heavy cavalry sword. Cavalry carbine. Non-commissioned officers have the sword only.

Artillery including Train.—The gunners in the foot Artillery are armed with the Infantry non-commissioned officer's sword. Artillery and Train.

The gunners in the Mounted and Horse Batteries have the light cavalry sword.

Gendarmerie.—The gendarmes are armed with the Albini carbine, and the heavy cavalry sword. Gendarmerie.

Field officers of Infantry and Engineers have the light cavalry sword. Infantry Field Officers.

The heavy cavalry sword is nearly straight—

Heavy cavalry sword.

Total length, 46·06 inches.

Length of blade, 38·19 inches.

Weight with scabbard, 4·85 lbs.

Weight without scabbard, 2·75 lbs.

The blade is single edged, and has a double concave section. The scabbard is of steel.

The light cavalry sword is more curved, and has a double edge 7·87 inches from point, and weighs about one-sixth less than the heavy cavalry sword. Light cavalry sword.

The lance is 9·22 feet long, and weighs 5·31 lbs. The staff Lance.

is of ash; the point of steel, triangular, and concave in section, with pennon.

Dismounted Troops.

Rifle. The Infantry of the Line, Grenadiers, and Chasseurs have the Albini rifle (pattern 1867).

The Regiment of Carabiniers (Rifles) and Engineers have the Terssen carbine (pattern 1868).

Privates and non-commissioned officers carry fire-arms, except the "adjudants sous-officiers"—one to each battalion.

Bayonet. Privates are armed with the bayonet, except the Grenadiers and all non-commissioned officers, who wear a sword. The Albini rifle is fitted with a bayonet triangular in section, and 18.11 inches in length; the Carabiniers have a sword-bayonet, and the Engineers a saw-bayonet, both for Terssen rifle.

The "adjudants sous-officiers" have the same sword as the officers.

Grenadiers and non-commissioned officer's sword. The sword of the Grenadiers, and non-commissioned officers is short and slightly curved:—

Total length with scabbard, 29.53 inches.

Length of blade, 23.62 inches.

Centre of gravity one-seventh length of blade from hilt.

Weight with scabbard, 2.53 lbs.

Weight without scabbard, 2.07 lbs.

The blade is triangular in section, the scabbard of leather, the hilt of solid brass. When first introduced this weapon was intended to serve as a tool for cutting brushwood, but it has not been found to answer the purpose.

Infantry officer's sword. The Infantry officer's sword has a leather scabbard, with brass end tipped with steel.

Total length, 37.4 inches.

Length of blade, 30.31 inches.

Weight with scabbard, 2.64 lbs.

Weight without scabbard, 2.31 lbs.

It is very slightly curved, is double-edged 5.9 inches from the point, and section of blade is concave; centre of gravity one-seventh length of blade.

The hilt is of black horn, guard of gilt brass.

Albini rifle. After a long series of experiments which took place in 1867, it was decided to give the whole army breechloading rifles. The Albini system was adopted for the infantry, with the exception of the regiments of carbineers; the muzzle-loaders (pattern 1853) were therefore converted into the present Albini rifle.

The length of rifle with bayonet is 72.44 inches.

The length of rifle without bayonet is 54.33 inches.

Weight without bayonet, 10.54 lbs.

Weight with bayonet, 11.28 lbs.

The centre of gravity is just under the back-sight when the *Albini rifle*, bayonet is fixed, and between the sight and lower band when the bayonet is unfixed.

The barrel is of Bessemer steel. Length 34.65 inches, calibre, .433 inch, four grooves .012 inch deep and .169 inch wide, twist uniform, one turn in 21.6 inches. Edges of grooves sharp, bottom concentric with bore, sides parallel, and diameter invariable.

The chamber is a truncated cone with ends .591 inch, and .532 inch diameter. The large size of the chamber allows a comparatively short cartridge to be used, and its shape facilitates the introduction of the cartridge. The rim of the cartridge is .689 inch diameter. The lands of the rifling close to the chamber are cut away slightly, so as to form a truncated cone .236 inch in length, the diameter of its ends being .457 inch and .433 inch respectively.

The cartridge is .433 inch in diameter, and weighs 623.2 grains. The charge of powder is 77.2 grains, and the bullet weighs 385.1 grains. Initial velocity 1,368 feet.

The *Terssen carbine* also is a conversion from the old muzzle-loader (pattern 1848), and very similar to the *Albini*. Terssen carbine.

The *Comblain carbine* is a breech-loader. Length 38.58 inches, Comblain carbine. length of barrel 22.17 inches, calibre .433 inch, weight 7.06 lbs. Four grooves with a twist of 1 in 15.75 inches, weight of bullet 385.1 grains, charge 61.78 grains.

The *Comblain* is a vertical sliding-block rifle-carbine, invented by a workman at Liège. Its leading features are very similar to those of the *Henry rifle*. It has, however, no hammer, or rather the hammer is concealed within the breech mechanism, and is cocked not by the finger, but by the operation of opening the breech. The mechanism consists of about 12 parts. It is easily taken to pieces and put together again. It is a strong, simple firearm, with a considerable rapidity of fire. It has been fired as often as 42 rounds in one minute; the average rate is about 26 to 32 rounds per minute. The motions are the same as with the *Martini-Henry*; but the cartridge does not slide into its place in the *Comblain*, as it does in the *Martini*, and from this cause the advantage would be slightly on the side of the latter arm.

For their service arms the Belgians use a cartridge of solid brass, known generally as the "cartouche belge." Belgian cartridge. This cartridge is regarded as a fixed point of the system, and all arms must be adapted to fire it. The base of the cartridge differs from the *Boxer* in being made of brass, a single brass cup base containing the detonating composition, which consists of a pat of composition pressed with a pressure of 8,000 kilos. (= about 8 tons) between two pieces of brass, the cap and anvil and cap chamber being thus dispensed with.

The detonating composition is—

Chlorate of potash 1	} Weighed dry.
Sulphide of antimony 1	
Fulminate of mercury 1	
	Weighed damp = about
	.8 when dry.

Belgian
cartridge.

The ingredients are mixed damp.

The charge for each cartridge is from .3 to .35 gramme (= from 4.6 to 5.4 grains).

The thickness of the inner cap is .7 mm. = .027 in.: of the outer brass cap .14 mm. = .055 in.

The varnish used for the inside of the cartridge and between the two brass caps is;

	Kils.
White shellac (<i>résine lac blonde</i>)	4
Colophony	1
Spirits (at 95° C.)	litres 60.5

The size of the brass sheet is

	Millimetres.	Millimetres.
Length	780	to 790
Width.. ..	270	to 275

Thickness, about .1 mm. = .0039 in.

Weight of one sheet of above dimensions, 135 to 155 grammes.

The lubrication is

Beeswax	$\frac{1}{4}$.
Mutton fat	$\frac{1}{4}$.

Weight.

The total weight of finished cartridge is 41 grammes = about 633 grains.

Price.

The price of the cartridge, finished and packed, is about 7 centimes apiece, which is about equal to £3 6s. 6d. per 1,000. In comparing the price with that of the English cartridge—

1st. The weight of charge and bullet are less, giving a smaller cartridge, and a reduced cost of powder and lead.

2nd. The cartridges are all made by soldiers, whose daily pay, including their military pay, is 130 centimes, equal to about 1s. 0 $\frac{1}{2}$ d.

3rd. The pay of the officers of the establishment is not charged against the Belgian cartridge.

With regard to the general character of these cartridges, they are coarser in appearance and make than our own; the bullets are cast, not compressed; and the whole cartridge is inferior in finish to that supplied to the English service, upon which the Belgian cartridge is based. But the ammunition is strong, serviceable, and simple.

Modifications
in the Belgian
cartridge.

Important modifications are shortly to be adopted as regards the ammunitions and weapons now in use, with a view to improving the shooting of the Infantry. The bullet of lead will be replaced by one of hard alloy of the same weight, but differing somewhat in form. This new projectile gives greater accuracy of fire, trajectory, longer range, and greater penetration than the leaden bullet.

As a consequence the sights will receive a new graduation and other alterations to allow of long distance fire.

With the present sight, the line of sight for 1,400 metres

(1,530 yards) strikes the muzzle of the rifle. This difficulty is avoided by adopting a lateral line of sight parallel to the axis of the barrel, for distances over 1,400 metres. This auxiliary line is regulated by means of a second notch in the sliding-bar of the back-sight, and a lateral fore-sight attached to the upper band.

Sighting of
Belgian ser-
vice rifles.

A series of trials have been carried out which have proved the value of these new arrangements; and the special commission appointed came to the conclusion that the Belgian arms rivalled in accuracy the best systems in use abroad, with the sole exception of the Martini-Henry.

The toy cartridge, called "cartouche pour le tir en chambre," is used by fitting the breech of the rifle with a false chamber. It is found very useful for instructing the men in musketry.

Cartridge for
Barrack
practice.

There is in the service a breechloading wall-piece on the Whitworth system. Calibre, .689 in.; weight, 33 lbs. It is sighted up to 1,400 metres (1,530 yards). There are two different kinds of bullet, one of mixed metal ($\frac{1}{2}$ zinc, $\frac{1}{2}$ tin) with ogival head, weighing 4.13 oz.; the other of cast steel, flat-headed, and weighing 4.81 oz. The latter is intended to pierce iron plates. The charge of powder, .875 oz., which gives an initial velocity of 1,339 feet with lighter bullet.

Wall pieces.

Officers carry a revolver (Nagant). Cavalry men and mounted artillery men have a pistol, which is to be replaced shortly by a revolver. Lancers and sub-officers of mounted artillery have the Chamelot-Delvigne revolver.

Pistol and
revolver.

The Belgian infantry soldier carries on his person 60 rounds; in the battalion carts there are 22 rounds per man, and in the ammunition columns 69 rounds (79 for the rifles): total 151 (or 161) per man.

Number of
rounds per
man.

The battalion wagon contains 20,000 rounds, and is drawn by 6 horses.

[See also "Infantry Ammunition Column," p. 51.]

Detailed Description of Fire Arms in use in the Belgian Army.

Description.	Arm in which used.
Rifle pattern, 1853 (Albini, 1867) ..	Infantry of the line. Chasseurs-à-pied. Grenadiers.
Carbine, pattern 1848 (Terssen, 1868)	Carabiniers.
Rifle, pattern 1868 (Terssen).. ..	This arm differs little from the carbine Terssen. It has a saw bayonet.
Carbine, pattern 1871 (Comblain) ..	Engineers. Chasseurs-à-cheval. Guides.
Carbine, pattern 1872 (Albini) ..	Gendarmerie.
Revolver, pattern 1871 (Chamelot-Delvigne)	Lancers, sub-officers of field artillery.
Officers' revolver, pattern 1848 (Nagant).	
Wall piece muzzle-loading.	

Albini Rifle.—Block action on a moveable forward transverse

TABLE of Weights and Dimensions.

Country.	Description of weapon.	Weight.			Length of the arm.		Barrel.		Grooves.				Cartridges.					Initial velocity. per sec.		
		Of the arm.		With sword bayonet.	Without bayonet.	With bayonet.	Calibre.	Length.		Number.	Width.	Depth.	in turn Twist.	Weight of the charge.	Bullet.				Total weight.	Length.
		Of the arm without the bayonet.	With bayonet.					Total.	The rifled part.						Weight.	Length.	Diameter.			
Belgium.	Rifle, pattern 1853-1867, Albini-Braendlin ..	lbs. oz. 10 8½	lbs. oz. 11 4	—	ft. ins. 4 6½	ft. ins. 6 0½	ins. .433 2	ins. 9 86	ft. ins. —	ins. 4	ins. .169	ins. .012 21	ins. .6	grs. 77	grs. 385	ins. .985	ins. .458	grs. 633	ins. 2 7	ft. 1368
	Carbine, pattern 1843-1868, Tersen ..	10 9½	—	12 2	4 2½	6 1½	.433 2	7 49	—	4	.169	.012 21	.6	77	385	.985	.458	633	2 7	1368
	Carbine, pattern 1871, Comblain ..	6 0½	—	—	3 2½	—	.433 1	10 16	—	4	.169	.012 17	.7	77	385	.985	—	617	—	—
	Do. do. ..	—	—	—	3 9	5 3	.433 2	2 97	—	4	.169	.012 15	.7	62	385	.985	—	617	—	—
	Revolver, pattern 1871, Chamelot-Delvigne ..	2 4½	—	—	0 9½	—	.433	—	—	4	.169	.012	—	19	231	.618	—	309	—	—
	Rifled wall-piece* ..	33 0	—	—	5 0	—	.589	—	—	—	Whitworth rifling				385	1820 } 2123 }	2 76	—	—	—

* One pattern of bullet is an alloy of zinc and tin; the other is of cast steel.

hinge. Central fire. Calibre, .433 in.; 4 grooves. Flap back sight, with sliding bar graduated up to 1,200 metres (1,312 yards); bed of sight with steps. Bayonet. Extractor with two limbs moving on the hinge of the block; stop stud at rear of the block; plunger attached to the hammer, and producing percussion.

Cartridge.—Cartridge case of sheet brass, varnished inside; base of brass; wrapped bullet.

Terssen Rifle.—Arm of same description as the preceding; a strong bolt maintains the block in the closed position; it is disengaged by means of a key placed on the right hand side of the arm.

Comblain Carbine.—Arm with falling breech block constituting the lock plate. Central fire. The block is set in motion by the rotation of the trigger-guard moving through a groove nearly straight and vertical.

CHAPTER XI.

Interior Economy—Drill, Barracks, Bedding, Messing, &c.

MANŒUVRES, &c.

IN the Belgian Army manœuvres and drill vary according to the season, and the effective strength under arms.

The winter is particularly set apart for the instruction of recruits. During the first period of this instruction the old soldiers, especially those of cavalry and infantry, go through Field drills (*exercices de guerre*) and the practice of duties in the field. In bad weather this practical work is replaced by theory, with the object of making the men familiar with their duties in barracks, on guard, in cantonments, camp, bivouac, &c.

Every colonel regulates the work at which his men are to be employed according to a table drawn up by himself, and approved by the general in command.

In the large garrisons from the month of May, battalion and Drill, &c. brigade drill takes place. On all occasions the number of men is insufficient, and rope drill has to be resorted to. As a general rule commanding officers can only do regimental drill at Beverloo, because in garrison the effective strength is reduced to a minimum by guards, numerous detachments, &c. Moreover the want of space in the vicinity of the garrisons prevents the full amount of advantage being obtained from these drills.

ill, &c.

The manœuvres in summer, which take place usually in July, form the closing period of military drills. For a long period Beverloo has been the theatre of these manœuvres, where the three arms are actually present.

By a circular of 12th April, 1876, it is laid down that in garrison practical work is to be done in Field service (*service de campagne*) and Piquets (*sûreté*) in minor operations, and manœuvres of the different arms combined and separate.

"Minor tactics (says the circular in question) should not be confined to simply marching along the road, or instruction drills (*exercices d'école*). They should, as far as possible, present the character of operations of war executed near to, or in presence of, the enemy.

"They will thus give opportunities to officers of learning to move and handle troops on every kind of ground. The commanders will at the same time learn to decide promptly as to their course of action.

"In every tactical application simple manœuvres will precede the more complicated. To every unit, detachment, or corps will be opposed an unit of about equal strength. Regiments may also be brigaded to operate against a supposed enemy (*marqué ou fictif*).

"Marching manœuvres of combined troops will be in marching order. They will be at first from 15 to 20 kilos. ($9\frac{1}{2}$ to $12\frac{1}{2}$ miles), but they may be gradually increased up to a limit of 25 kilos. ($15\frac{1}{2}$ miles)."

The circular then gives instructions for carrying out the manœuvres, and terminates as follows:—

"Commanding officers will take measures to prevent accidents. Opposing forces should not approach nearer than 60 paces from one another.

"The defence of inhabited places, the occupation of houses, and the destruction of bridges should be simply indicated.

"It is forbidden to tread down cultivated fields. Lines of railway are to be crossed only by crossings and bridges. In this case allowance will be made for what would really be done in war. In short, every precaution will be taken to avoid any danger, damage, or complaint on the part of the inhabitants."

From the above extracts it would appear that the scope of these manœuvres is somewhat restricted; and as they usually take place in garrison they have a purely local character, and in many cases at least one of the three arms is wanting. At Antwerp, for instance, manœuvres take place without cavalry.

Manœuvres.

In 1881 manœuvres on an extended scale were carried on in the Ardennes in September, a season of the year which allows of all damage to the crops being avoided.

A circular of 27th August, 1878, gives special directions for the training of the men in extended order.

Provisional instructions for troops on Field Service were issued in 1881, superseding the old regulations of 1832.

The code of military administration, which dates from 1819, is now undergoing revision.

The following are in preparation:—

Regulations for Drill and Manœuvres of Cavalry.

Regulations on Musketry for Infantry.

Regulations on Interior Economy.

Drill Instruction.

Drill
instruction.

The instruction of the Belgian infantry soldier is divided into four parts:—

1st. *Individual instruction, three months.* Extension motions, position and marching, gymnastic instruction, lectures on cleanliness, military duty, discipline and guard mounting, elementary exercises with rifle, bayonet, and in skirmishing.

2nd. *Company drills, three months.* Drill in close and open order, duty with advanced posts, attack and defence, target practice.

3rd. *Battalion drills, three months.* Different formations and marches, principles of the fighting formation of a battalion, continued target practice.

4th. *Regimental manœuvres and operations in time of war,* two months.

The captain is responsible for company instruction, the major for the battalion, and the colonel for regimental instruction.

LENGTH of Columns.

Column on
the march.

Fractions of Troops.					Length.	Plus $\frac{1}{4}$ for opening out.	Length of time in passing.
					yds.	yds.	min. sec.
Infantry ..	{ Company .. .. .	..	..	..	77	96	1 6
	{ Battalion .. .. .	..	..	..	308	385	4 23
	{ Regiment .. .. .	..	..	..	885	1188	13 30
Squadron in fours (English sections)					83	104	1 0
Squadrons in twos (English half-sections)					387	484	4 22
Regiment					163	201	1 51
Artillery. Battery of artillery, 20 wagons ..					704	880	7 53
					374	467	4 15

The above calculations are made on following bases:—A man occupies 0·70 m. (2 ft. 3·5 in.) in the ranks; length of horse and interval, 3 metres (9 ft. 10 in.); length of a wagon and 6 horses, 17 metres (56 ft. 9 in.), with interval.

The length of the *ordinary* pace is 75 cm. (29·5 in.), and the number per minute is 110.

Steppingly back, 37 cm. (14·56 in.); ordinary cadence.

Rate of
march and
length of
pace.

Rates of march.

"*Pas de charge*," 80 cm. (31·5 in.); 130 per minute.

"*Pas gymnastique*," 85 cm. (33·5 in.); 165 per minute.

Distance between the ranks in line is 40 cm. (15·75 in.) measured from the chest of the rear-rank man to the knapsack of the front rank man. This is doubled on the march.

*Barracks, Messing and Bedding.***Barrack rooms.**

The barrack rooms are usually for about 20 men. The serjeant-major and quartermaster-serjeant have a room between them; the other serjeants are in one room. The rooms are well ventilated.

The beds are arranged with heads against the wall. Two shelves are fastened above the bed, on which the soldiers' kit is placed. The bedsteads are of iron, and are provided with 1 hair mattress, 1 mattress, 1 bolster, 2 blankets, 1 pair sheets.

During the day the bedding is doubled up and placed at the foot of the bed.

The barrack rooms are provided with tables and benches.

Non-commissioned officers are allowed a small box to be kept under their beds, and which they move at their own expense on change of quarters.

The cook-houses and latrines are in separate buildings.

Separate married quarters are also attached to the barracks at Brussels.

Huts at Beverloo.

The huts at Beverloo are of brick, roofed with tiles. They are long buildings, divided into five rooms, each for 20 beds.

Rations.

The Belgian soldier receives 750 grammes (1·66 lbs. avd.) bread; 250 grammes (0·55 lb.) meat; 1,000 grammes (2·20 lbs.) potatoes and other vegetables, 16 grammes of salt, and a quart of coffee, without sugar, daily.

His meals are:—Breakfast, quart of coffee and bread.

10 A.M. beef and soup.

5 P.M. plate of vegetables.

New barracks.

Barracks in the vicinity of Brussels are being actively proceeded with for infantry, cavalry, and artillery. There is a spacious drill ground covering an area of about 115 acres, and offering, by its configuration, great advantages for applied tactics.

Bedding of troops.

By the decree of 26th June, 1814, modified by that of 22nd June, 1873, the bedding of the troops is furnished either by the communes, by the "*Compagnie des Lits Militaires*," or by the State. The administrations of communes which continue to furnish articles of bedding under the decree of 26th June, 1814, receive an indemnity fixed at the rate of 5 centimes per man per day (Royal Order in Council, 31st January, 1835).

Under contract of 4th June, of the same year, the "*Compagnie des Lits Militaires*" furnished, on hire, to the War

Department up to September 31st, 1872, 24,450 single beds and 1,200 double beds at 20 francs per year for a double bed and 15 francs a year for a single bed. This contract was cancelled on 1st October, 1872, by agreement between the War Minister and the "Compagnie des Lits Militaires." A new contract was entered into for the lease of articles of bedding from the above date up to 31st December, 1895, on the same terms for 30,000 single beds and 1,200 double beds. The law of 16th February, 1878, raised the number of single beds to be provided by the company to 35,000 instead of 30,000.

In camps and garrisons, when the articles of bedding are insufficient, whether furnished by the commune or by the "Compagnie des Lits Militaires," the bedding of the troops is provided by the State.

CHAPTER XII.

COUNCIL OF MILITARY EDUCATION AND EDUCATIONAL ESTABLISHMENTS.

I. Council of Military Education—II. War School at Ixelles (Entrance and Final Examinations, Appointment to Staff, &c.)—III. Military School at Ixelles—IV. School for Volunteers of Infantry, at Louvain—V. School for Soldier's Children, at Alost—VI. School of Musketry, and Training School for Infantry, at Beverloo—VII. Regimental Schools—VIII. Artillery School and Practice-ground, at Brasschaet—IX. Pyrotechnical School—X. Riding School, at Ypres—XI. School of Fieldworks for Infantry.

I. COUNCIL OF MILITARY EDUCATION (*Conseil de perfectionnement des établissements d'instruction militaire*).

THE Council of Military Education consists of ten members, and must comprise at least one General or Field Officer who belongs, or who has belonged to the Staff Corps; one General or Field Officer who belongs, or who has belonged to the Infantry; one General or Field Officer who belongs, or has belonged to the Cavalry; one General or Field Officer who belongs, or has belonged to the Artillery; and one General or Field Officer who belongs, or has belonged to the Engineers; the Commandant of the War School, the Commandant of the Military School.

The duties of secretary and keeper of the records are filled

**Council of
Military
Education.**

by the commandant of the War School, or in his absence by the second commandant of the Military School.

The secretary is present at the meetings of the Council, but has no voice in the proceedings.

The members are appointed and released from their duties by Royal decree. They may not be selected from professors at the establishments of military instruction. The senior officer presides.

**Duties of
Council of
Military
Education.**

The Council advises the War Minister on the recommendations made by the commandants of the War School and Military School as to the appointment of professors and masters at their establishments. It approves the programmes of newly-appointed professors at the War School and Military School; the commandants of these schools submit the programmes to the Council. Members may be present during any part of the course of studies at the War School and Military School. The Council proposes to the War Minister modifications in the general plan of instruction at these schools, and in the special programme of any particular course.

The members of the Council undertake the examination of the third-year students at the War School. One of the members superintends the examinations which take place at the end of the first and second year of study.

The Council assembles officially from 1st to 15th October, after receipt from the War Department of the annual reports on Instructional Establishments by the Superior Commandant of Cavalry, the Inspectors-General of Artillery and Engineers, Commandants of Divisions of Infantry and the Commandants of the War School, Military School, and School for soldiers' children.

The Council then sends in to the War Minister a general report on the progress of studies and instruction in the army.

The Council may be assembled by the War Minister directly through the President, on a special demand by the Commandant of the War School or the Commandant of the Military School.

II. WAR SCHOOL AT IXLLES.**War School,
and appoint-
ment to the
Staff.**

The object of the War School is to give an impetus to the study of the higher branches of the military art throughout the army, and to assure the recruitment of Staff Officers.

The "personnel" comprises a Commandant; a Second in Command; a Director of Studies; 20 Professors; 15 Assistant Professors (*répétiteurs*). Masters in Flemish, English, German, Drawing and Riding; and a Pay-master.

The administrative council is composed of

The Commandant	President.
2nd in Command	} Members.
2 Military Professors	
Paymaster as secretary.	

The War School is open to officers of all arms, who War School have passed the entrance examination and fulfil the following conditions :—

1. A service of three consecutive years in the grade of officer.
2. A thorough knowledge of the arm to which they belong. Character, intelligence and vigour requisite for the service of the Staff in the field.
3. Recommendation as candidate by the Inspector-General of the arm to which the candidate belongs.

Entrance Examination.

The programme for admission is as follows :—

Entrance
examination.

- i. *a.* Arithemtic.
- b.* Algebra and use of logarithms.
- c.* Plane geometry.
- d.* Geometry of three dimensions.
- e.* The whole of plane trigonometry.
- f.* Descriptive geometry.
- ii. *a.* Physics.
- b.* Chemistry.
- iii. General History to the fall of the Western Roman Empire.
Ancient Military History.
Complete National History.
Cosmography and general Geography.
Physical, political, administrative, and military geography of Belgium.
- iv. Military Science. Officers must have a perfect knowledge of the tactics of the arm to which they belong, and be up to the standard of infantry and cavalry candidates for the rank of sub-lieutenant, in topography, tactics, fortification, and artillery.
- v. Linear drawing, topographical drawing.
- vi. French literature—style, composition.
- vii. Flemish—standard of candidates for rank of sub-lieutenant.

The entrance examination is held at the War School, and is as far as possible in writing.

The examination is by a Board, composed of the commandant of the War School as President, and the professors or masters of the different subjects.

The Board makes out a list of the candidates in order of merit.

The admissions are fixed by the War Ministry, and are for one year only.

Officers detached from their corps on special duties, must rejoin their regiments one year before the date fixed for the examination.

Officers of Artillery and Engineers, fulfilling certain conditions, may join the second year's course of study directly.

After being twice unsuccessful, candidates are not allowed to go up again for the entrance examination.

In April each year the War Minister publishes the programme of examination and conditions to be fulfilled, as well

Entrance.

as the number of officers for whom there are vacancies in the school. *Two-thirds* of the vacancies are reserved for officers of infantry and cavalry.

The complete course of instruction at the War School lasts three years.

The scholastic year is ten months, from 1st September to 30th June. The studies are suspended from 31st December to 7th January, and for a fortnight at Easter.

At the termination of the scholastic year, officers rejoin their regiments.

**Course of study.
Theory.**

The theoretical instruction at the School comprehends :—

- French literature.
- Flemish language.
- German language.
- English language.
- General history.
- Military history.
- Physical, political, and military geography.
- Ethnography and meteorology.
- Geology.
- Study of military communications in the Field.
- Mathematics {
 - Descriptive geometry.
 - Spherical trigonometry.
 - Analytical geometry.
 - Differential and integral calculus.
 - Probabilities.
- Topography.
- Geodesy.
- Astronomy.
- Physics.
- Chemistry.
- Artillery. Military bridges.
- Fortification, permanent and semi-permanent.
- Fortification, temporary or field.
- Tactics.
- Strategy.
- Service of the Staff.
- International law.
- Military Justice, Legislation, and Administration.
- Hygiene.
- Veterinary instruction.
- Drawing.
- Riding.
- Fencing.

*Applied Instruction.***Applied instruction.**

The theoretical course of the first two years terminates on 1st May. The months of May and June are occupied in visiting the Artillery Establishments and Fortresses of the country, or in practical instruction in tactics, fortification, sketching, and manoeuvring on the ground.

The examinations take place during the latter part of the month of June. Applied instruction.

In October the students of the third year make a Staff tour, which must not last more than fifteen days. The programme is submitted to the War Minister before the 1st of May.

In addition, they draw up when with their Regiments a paper on some question taking in the whole of the military sciences taught at the school. They are permitted to make use of any notes or works on the subjects. Probationary examination.

These essays are examined by the professors of the military sciences who assemble under the presidency of the commandant to allot marks.

The Minister of War fixes :—

The programme of studies.

The special course in each subject of study.

The subjects in which attendance is obligatory.

Those in which attendance is voluntary.

The professors hold oral examinations of the students at the end of each year's course in all branches except languages, drawing, riding, and fencing.

Probationary Examination.

At the end of each of the first two years a Board, with one of the members of the Council of Military Education as President, and composed of the Commandant, second in command, and the Professors, proceeds to hold the probationary examinations (*examens de passage*) from one year to another. These examinations are, as far as possible, in writing, and bear on all the branches of instruction during the year, except languages, drawing, riding, and fencing.

The final examination takes place before the Council of Military Education, and comprises : Final examination.

a. Written examinations in—

Administration.

International law and military justice.

Physical geography of Belgium.

Ethnography and meteorology.

Veterinary science.

Geodesy.

b. Oral examinations in :—

Tactical studies.

Service of the Staff.

Military history.

Military communications in the Field.

General history.

c. A consideration and valuation of the essay completed at the end of the year's study.

The Board may, in addition, examine orally in any of these subjects if they think fit. Students may also be called upon

Final examination. to discuss, *vis à vis*, those subjects in which they have been examined on paper.

d. Practical examination out-of-doors in Sketching and Riding.

Classification. The final classification is made according to the total number of marks obtained in all these examinations.

First year. Those students only of the *first year* are allowed to go through the second year's course, who have obtained *half the allotted maximum of marks in all subjects*.

Second year. Students of the *second year* are allowed to continue for a third year when they have obtained *three-fifths of the maximum in the principal subjects of examination, and one-half the number in voluntary subjects*.

Students of second year who obtain half marks are considered to be qualified for promotion, under certain conditions, in the Infantry and Cavalry.

Third year. The certificate of Staff Assistant (*adjoint d'état-major*) is only allowed to students of the third year who have obtained *thirteen-twentieths of the marks allotted to the obligatory subjects of the second and third years, and half the marks in the voluntary subjects*.

The Council of Military Education, after estimating the result of the examinations, sends to the War Minister confidentially—

Report by Council of Military Education.

- A. The classification of the students of each year.
- B. Its opinion, and that of commandants, on the special aptitudes, conduct, and military qualities of the students of the third year.
- C. A report on the result of the examinations.

The Council also state at the same time—

- (a.) The first year students who are to return for the second year's course.
- (b.) The second year students who are to continue for the third year.
- (c.) Students considered qualified for promotion in their arm of the service under certain heads.
- (d.) Third year students who are to receive the Staff Certificate.
- (e.) Those students who have distinguished themselves by obtaining *seven-tenths of the maximum number* of marks in the important subjects during the second and third years, and who have at the same time a special aptitude for the service of the staff.

General list for Staff appointments (d). Special list (e).

(For tables of entries, passes, and failures, from 1878–1879, see Appendix III, No. 1.)

The Commandant may recommend the removal of a student from the War School for misconduct, want of application or industry, or for ill health preventing the officer from going through the course. The officer is removed by decree of the War Minister.

Students at the War School are lodged at their own expense ; War School but they may have quarters in the establishment if there be room.

Appointment to the Staff.

Staff Captains are selected from students who have passed the War School with the certificate of Staff Assistant (*adjoint d'état-major*)—provided they are desirous of entering the corps—and who have been noted by the Council of Military Education as fulfilling the conditions necessary for the service of the Staff (*e*), and, in case of necessity, from those Staff Assistants who at the final examination have obtained at least thirteen-twentieths of the maximum in the obligatory subjects (*d*).

Staff Assistants who have satisfied this last condition are considered as having passed all examinations for promotion which have been or may be instituted in the future in their arm, for promotion by selection.

Staff Assistants noted for Staff employ by the Council of Military Education, are, after their probationary course (*stage*) with other arms, employed on trial for a month at least in the special service of the staff.

The following cannot be appointed Staff Captains:—

1. Officers over 35 years of age.
2. Officers of the rank of captain senior to the last officer admitted to the Staff, unless they consent to take rank after the said junior officer.

Course with other Arms.

The newly appointed Staff Assistants belonging to the Course with Infantry or Engineers may be required to go through a course (*stage*) of a year at least with Cavalry, and those of Cavalry and Artillery of at least a year with Infantry.

The course is *obligatory* on those Staff Assistants who have been noted by the Council of Military Education as having special aptitude for the Staff (*e*). They may be also required to go through a year's course at the Riding School at Ypres, unless they have already been to this establishment.

Staff Assistants of Infantry and Engineers serving temporarily with mounted troops have a right to a troop horse. Those of the Infantry have an allowance granted by royal warrant.

Officers of the Staff Corps are obliged, on promotion (up to the rank of colonel inclusive), to go through a course of a year at least in a regiment of Infantry, Cavalry, or Artillery. During their absence for this reason they are replaced by a Staff Assistant.

Officers of the Staff Corps and Staff Assistants going through a course with troops, or called on to do the duties of a Staff Officer, are reported on by their immediate chiefs to the War Minister at the conclusion of the course.

Appointment
of aides-de-
camp, &c.

When the War School shall have produced a sufficient number of Staff Assistants, aides-de-camp and "adjutants-majors" of regiments will be selected as much as possible from this category of officers.

An allowance of 40 francs (£1 12s.) a month is granted to Staff Assistants belonging to Infantry while attached for the usual course (*stage*) to Cavalry and Artillery.

Officers of the Staff are to be practised annually in executing the kind of work they would be employed on in the field.

Regulations for Staff Assistants (Officiers-adjoints d'état-major) while going through a Course with other Arms.

Regulations
while going
through a
course with
other arms.

1. Assistant staff officers (*officiers-adjoints*), in default of an order to the contrary from the War Department, are to be with that portion of the corps commanded by the colonel.

2. On joining they are to have command of an active detachment, and to take part in all the duties of their rank.

3. After eight months' duty with Infantry and Cavalry, sub-lieutenants, lieutenants, and captains will perform the duties of "adjutants-majors." They are to take the place of the latter, not only at drill, but in all the details of daily routine.

4. During this second period of instruction they are to be at the disposition of their major for supervising the administration and the ordinary books, and may be employed by the colonel to assist the "adjutant-major" of the regiment.

In the Artillery the Colonel of the Regiment directs the instruction of the attached officer to those points more specially applicable to the service of the Staff, such as the movements and tactics of Field Artillery, the escort of columns of wagons or convoys, their arrangement on the road, in cantonments, camps, and bivouacs.

The officer will be instructed with care in all that has reference to the supply of ammunition by Artillery to the troops. He will take part in Artillery practice during one period of instruction at least.

5. On the march these officers are to be employed in the selection and laying out of cantonments, camps, and bivouacs. In such cases they furnish a short report, with a sketch in explanation if necessary.

6. The Colonels of Regiments examine them, at the end of their course, in the field exercises and manoeuvres of the arm with which they are serving; on the administration of a company, of a squadron or battery; and on the regulations regarding interior economy in garrison and in the field.

7. The result of this examination is noticed in the report which Colonels of Regiments have to furnish on the termination of the course.

8. Officers commanding brigades and Divisions are to see to the execution of the above provisions.

Pay of officers of the Staff Corps is as follows :—

	Yearly.
Colonels	£380
Lieutenant-colonel..	284
Major	252
Captain, 1st class ..	204
„ 2nd „	176
„ 3rd „	160
Lieutenants	128
Sub-lieutenants	112

Pay of officers
of the Staff
Corps.

Allowances are—

Chief of staff of a Military Instruction and Division of Infantry £60 per annum; of a Military Instruction £36; for an Infantry Division £24.

Extra travelling and field allowances are allotted to officers of the Staff Corps.

III. MILITARY SCHOOL (ECOLE MILITAIRE) AT IXXELLES.

The military school was established in 1869, and re-organised in 1872. Objects of military school.

It was instituted for the purpose of training officers for—

Infantry.
Cavalry.
Artillery.
Engineers.

It also affords an opportunity for study to men desirous of improving their position after having passed some years in the ranks. It has given the Belgian Army a high reputation for scientific knowledge.

The duration of the course is two years for the Infantry and Cavalry section, and four years for the section of Artillery and Engineers. Duration of course.

Admission to the school can only be obtained by competitive examination. Conditions of entrance.

No one is allowed to compete until it has been proved :—

1. That he is a Belgian, or naturalised.
2. That he is more than 16 years of age, and was under 20 on the 1st January of the current year.

As an exception, persons in military service (*militaires des corps d'armée*) are permitted to compete up to the age of 25.

At the time of examination candidates must produce a certificate of good conduct from the administration of the "commune" in which they reside. Entrance examination.

The examination for the special arms (Artillery and Engineers) and that for Cavalry and Infantry are distinct. The lists of candidates are different, and the examinations are held on dates more or less distant one from the other; and published in

Entrance examination.

the "Moniteur Officiel" at least three months beforehand. The examination for the special arms cannot, under any circumstances, affect the candidate's position in the list of the examination for Infantry and Cavalry.

The examinations for admission are carried out by a board appointed annually by the King, and of which the director of studies at the school is president. The examinations are written and oral.

Candidates are medically examined before being permitted to compete.

Programme of examination.**PROGRAMME OF EXAMINATION.**

- I. Mathematics.
- II. Literary Knowledge, History, and Geography.

A. SPECIAL ARMS.

- a. Arithmetic.
- b. Algebra.
- c. Elementary geometry.
- d. Trigonometry (plane and spherical).
- e. Analytical geometry.
- f. Descriptive geometry.
- g. Drawing.

B. CAVALRY AND INFANTRY.

Arithmetic, geometry, plane trigonometry, and drawing, as for the special arms.

Algebra, a lower standard.

For all candidates.

- h. French language.
- i. Latin, Flemish, German, or English.
- k. History—Modern History in detail; Complete History of Belgium.
- l. Geography.

Any candidate who has not obtained the minimum number of marks fixed beforehand, both in mathematics and in literature, is in no case to be included in the list of those who have passed.

The admission of students is fixed by the War Minister, according to the results of the examination.

Every candidate admitted as a student to the military school must present himself within four days of the commencement of the course, which shall have been notified to him; otherwise he is to be considered to have resigned.

*Scholarships.**Scholarships.*

Scholarships are granted to:—

1. Persons in the army who, after at least two years' service, shall have passed the entrance examination.
2. Sons of military functionaries and employés, as well as other persons who have done good service to the State.
3. Candidates who have passed the examinations with distinction.

Applications for scholarships which are in the King's gift should be made not later than the commencement of the examination.

These applications should be accompanied by:—

1. A certificate stating that the parents are not in a position to pay the regular fees.
2. A declaration (certified by the local authority) stating in detail the income and means of the applicant, &c.

If the application is based on services rendered to the State by the father of the candidate, a statement of these services certified by proper authority should be furnished.

In all cases scholarships are granted for one year only, and are continued for the second year, subject to the good conduct of the student and success in his studies.

On joining the school, students undergo a medical examination, for the purpose of certifying that they have no malformation nor infirmity which would prevent their going through the course at the school, or unfit them for military service.

The annual payment is 800 francs (£32), payable quarterly in advance; further sums of 685 francs (£27 8s.) for outfit, and 200 francs (£8) for stationery, &c., being deposited, for which an account is rendered at the termination of the course of studies.

Annual payment, &c.

Students from the army receive the pay and allowances of their rank, provided they have contracted a voluntary engagement of eight years before going up for examination.

Every student receives a sum of 1 fr. 70 c. (1s. 5d.) per diem for food, washing, and the expense of keeping up his clothing.

Students, on entering the second year of study, must contract an engagement to serve eight years.

Engagement contract.

IV. SCHOOL FOR VOLUNTEERS OF INFANTRY.

The school for volunteers of infantry was instituted with the object of giving to young men who desire to follow a military career such an amount of education and instruction as will allow of their performing the duties of sub-officers in that branch of the service, and of taking up some civil employment after a certain number of years with the colours.

Staff and strength.	<p>The school comprises a battalion staff and four companies. Each company is of the following strength :—</p> <p>1 captain commandant, 1 lieutenant, 2 sub-lieutenants, 1 serjeant-major, 1 quartermaster-serjeant, 6 serjeants, 150 students as corporals and privates.</p>
	<p>The duties of corporal are performed by the students as soon as they are considered fit.</p> <p>The commandant of the school has the powers of commandant of a detached battalion, and directs the instruction in all its branches.</p>
Composition.	<p>The school is recruited from young men who are willing to contract an engagement as volunteers for 8 years in accordance with Article 100 of the law on the "milice" of 1870, modified by the law of 18th September, 1873.</p>
Conditions of entrance.	<p>They must fulfil the following conditions :—</p> <p>1st. Be over 16 and under 20 years of age on entrance. 2nd. Of good conduct. 3rd. Of a robust constitution, and free from physical defects. 4th. Of a fair height, giving promise of reaching at least the required standard for "miliciens" of infantry.</p>
	<p>In forwarding applications for engagement, the candidates must transmit the written consent of their parents or guardians, certificate of birth, and certificate of good conduct from the administration of the commune to which they belong.</p> <p>On reaching the school they are medically examined, and, if found unfit are sent to their homes.</p>
Duration of course.	<p>The course is three years.</p> <p>Candidates who at the end of the first year are sufficiently advanced, enter on the second year's course as private or corporal, according to their attainments.</p>
Instruction.	<p>The instruction is essentially professional, and aims at fitting them to become efficient sub-officers with troops, or to take the post of accountant (<i>comptable</i>) if they have the requisite qualifications.</p> <p>The professional instruction, both theoretical and practical, includes all the knowledge which sub-officers should possess for performing their duties in all services, and in addition,</p> <p>Instruction in bivouacs, Construction of huts, kitchens, shelter-trenches, &c., in the field, The elements of the theory of musketry, The administration of a company, Fencing, gymnastics, and swimming.</p> <p>The scholastic instruction includes : reading, writing, and the elements of the French and Flemish languages ; simple rules of</p>

arithmetic; the legal system of weights and measures; the first Instruction. elements of cosmography and general geography; elementary history and geography of the country; definition of plane figures, &c.; practical reading of the map of a country; elementary notions on hygiene; elements of drawing; military administration.

The programme of instruction is fixed by the War Minister on the recommendation of the commandant.

At the end of each scholastic year examinations take place by the professors; and the commandant then addresses a report to the Minister, with recommendations as to—

- 1st. Students to be posted to regiments.
- 2nd. Students to be admitted to the higher grade of students.
- 3rd. Students to be allowed, specially, another year's study in extension.
- 4th. Students to be promoted corporal or serjeant.

The first third of the students who have passed the first year's examination, and all who have passed the second year's examination, are to have the rank of corporal, if not already promoted.

The students, on completing the course, are posted to the different regiments of infantry by the War Department, and those who have passed the final examination obtain the rank of serjeant.

A student may be sent away from the school for misconduct or incapacity by the War Minister on the recommendation of the commandant.

Administration.

The school is attached, for financial purposes, to the 1st Administration. Regiment of Foot Chasseurs.

It is administered as a detached battalion.

The company commanders conform to the regulations for payment of a company of infantry.

The students receive pay as infantry soldiers, according to their rank.

Clothing, Arms, &c.

The clothing is that of the infantry, with special distinctive Clothing, marks on the buttons, shakos, and forage caps. arms, &c.

Students are armed like non-commissioned officers of infantry.

General Regulations.

The students are subject to the military laws, which are General given them to read on entrance. regulations.

For the interior economy, police, and discipline of the school, the regulations for the Infantry are in force.

General regulations.

The school is inspected once a year by a general officer appointed by the Minister of War.

When the school for volunteers takes part in reviews, its place is on the right of the infantry next to the Musketry School.

The students at the school do not perform garrison duties.

In case of mobilisation the school breaks up, and the staff and students are sent to join without delay the dépôts of the corps to which they belong. With this object the students are posted provisionally at the beginning of each year's study, to the different corps of infantry.

V. SCHOOL FOR SOLDIERS' CHILDREN (*enfants de troupe*) AT ALOST.

Object.

The school for soldiers' children was instituted by Royal Order in Council of 15th April, 1847, with the object of giving general instruction, as well as moral and military education, to soldiers' children who are destined to recruit the inferior "cadres" of the army.

Composition.

The school is divided into six sections of 40 students each. For the interior service and discipline the sections are separated in the same way as the companies of a battalion.

Each section is commanded by an officer as professor, and two sub-officers as monitors.

Course of study.

The "enfants de troupe" are prepared for a military career by a regular development of their intellectual, moral, and physical faculties.

The programme comprises four years of study, and a preparatory course. The students are placed in the preparatory course, and in the first three years of study, according to the degrees of instruction they have attained; they are only admitted to the fourth year by authorisation of the War Minister.

The scientific instruction embraces all that a sub-officer should know in the different stations he may be called upon to fill, and corresponds to the instruction given during the first year in regimental schools. In addition, diligent and well-conducted students, admitted to the higher course (fourth year of study at the school), acquire sufficient instruction to be able to follow with benefit the lessons of the special course (third year's study in regiments), when they have become good sub-officers, and merited this indulgence by their zeal, intelligence, and military qualities.

Course of Instruction.

Great attention is paid to the professional part of the instruction, as regards actual warfare, and with a view to fitting the students to become good instructors.

The time devoted to scientific lessons is not to exceed 21 hours each week, and to similar studies 10½ hours. The

remainder is taken up in practical military instruction, athletic exercises, music lessons, practice of cleanliness, recreations and walks in the country.

The regulations for interior economy, discipline, and administration, are similar to those for the army in general, except where special regulations for the school exist. Interior economy, &c.

Detailed instructions as to organisation, administration, discipline, and course of instruction, are given in circular of Minister of War, dated 1st September, 1876.

The practical professional education includes :—

Professional education.

Squad drill (*école du soldat*).

Company and battalion drill.

Principles of musketry instruction, judging distance, aiming drill, snapping caps.

Duties in garrison.

Precautions for assuring the safety of small posts in the field, sentries, patrols, reconnaissances, scouting.

Construction of kitchens, and shelter in the field, shelter trenches.

Gymnastics, dancing, swimming, fencing.

Sword and bâton exercises.

Singing and instrumental music.

On the mobilisation of the army the school breaks up, and the staff are sent to the dépôt of the corps to which they belong. The students are also sent to the dépôts of the corps to which they are assigned. With this view they are provisionally attached to the different regiments of the army. Students who have strength and aptitude for active service, are attached to companies; those who are not sufficiently developed, but who write sufficiently well, may be utilised as assistant clerks at the dépôts. Those who cannot be employed go back to their parents or guardians, or in case of their having none, they remain under care of officers commanding dépôts. Mobilisation.

VI. SCHOOL OF MUSKETRY AND INSTRUCTION FOR INFANTRY AT BEVERLOO.

The school of instruction for infantry was established :—

(a). To introduce a uniform system of tactics, and a better acquaintance with :

(1). The small arms, ammunition, and musketry system of the army.

(2). Tactical requirements in the field, as applied to ground.

(3). Fortification of the field of battle.

(b). To form good instructors for the infantry.

(c). To study the small arms, ammunition, musketry system, regulations on tactics and field service for Infantry, in foreign armies; to carry out experiments on the ground, when necessary, and to make deductions as to the improvements requisite in the arms, ammunition, musketry practice, and regulations of the Belgian army.

Organisation. The school of musketry consists of a commandant and a Battalion Staff, and four companies on war footing.

Establishment of each company. Each company has :

- 1 captain commandant.
- 1 lieutenant and 2 sub-lieutenants as commanders of sections (*chefs de peloton*) in the even companies; 2 lieutenants, and 1 sub-lieutenant in the uneven companies.
- 1 serjeant-major.
- 1 first serjeant.
- 6 serjeants.
- 12 corporals (on the establishment).
- 4 buglers.
- 200 corporals and privates in the ranks.

Staff. The following are attached to the Battalion Staff, viz. :

(1). *As professors :*

- 1 Staff Captain, or 1 Assistant Staff captain or lieutenant.
- 1 captain or lieutenant of Artillery.
- 1 captain or lieutenant of Engineers.

(2). *For special services :*

- 1 lieutenant or sub-lieutenant doing duty as "officier d'armement."
- 1 lieutenant or sub-lieutenant doing duty as "officier d'économe,"
- and 11 staff officers and non-commissioned officers.

Personnel. The "personnel" is furnished by regiments of infantry, and renewed, as far as possible, each year, with the exception of the commandant, the adjutant-major, and the professors.

The battalion staff is appointed by the War Minister. The other officers are selected by generals commanding Divisions, on the recommendation of officers commanding Regiments; the remainder of the "personnel" are selected by officers commanding corps.

The sub-officers are selected from the oldest and most efficient sub-officers who have at least two years more to serve.

The corporals from volunteers selected for promotion, or in default of such from "miliciens" corporals.

Private soldiers from volunteers selected for promotion to

the rank of corporal, and in default of such from intelligent Personnel. "miliciens" who are good shots.

The commandant of the school has the executive and administrative powers of the officer commanding a corps. He directs the instruction, and supervises all branches of the service.

Instruction.

The theoretical and practical instruction bears on :

- 1st. The tactics of marches, combats, and positions, applied to the ground.
- 2nd. The fortification of the battle-field.
- 3rd. Firing at different ranges (special attention being given to impressing on the "cadres" and soldiers the importance of fire discipline).

The attached officer goes through—

- (a). A course of tactics comprising the important changes recently introduced into the tactics of marches, combats, and the occupation of ground, in foreign armies. Experiments in these tactics to be made on the ground.
- (b). A course of fortification on the field of battle, during which the progress made in this subject in foreign armies is to be examined.
- (c). A course of artillery, which is to include a comparative study of small arms, ammunition, and musketry practice in foreign armies.

The course to be as practical as possible in all that has reference to the infantry,—scientific and abstract matters being excluded as far as possible.

The period of instruction is three months.

At the expiration of this period the school proceeds to Brussels, where it is inspected by the War Minister and general officers of infantry.

The school is then broken up.

The commandant, on conclusion of the course, sends in a report on works executed, and results obtained, with suggestions as to organisation and instruction in the school.

General Regulations.

No furlough is allowed during the course except for special and urgent reasons.

The school takes no part in garrison duties.

When taking part in reviews it is posted on the right of the infantry next the "School for Volunteers."

On mobilisation "the personnel" is at once directed on the dépôt of the corps to which they belong.

VII. INSTRUCTION IN REGIMENTAL SCHOOLS.

Reports as to
instruction
in regimental
schools.

The Council of Military Education (*conseil de perfectionnement*) was directed by Royal Decree, 3rd February, 1876, to send each year to the Minister of War a general report on the progress of instruction in the army. The reports to be sent in by the officers commanding regiments, and relative to instruction, are to be in the following order :—

1. Regimental schools.
2. Courses for uneducated soldiers (*illétrés*).
3. Night schools.
4. Preparatory courses for the military school.
5. Practical work (field fortification, topography, reconnaissances).
6. Lectures and examinations of officers.

These documents are retained in the archives.

They furnish the elements for the compilation of the annual statistics, the triennial reports, and the decennial analysis of the state of the kingdom.

The scholastic year for schools and courses of instruction established in Regiments of Artillery and Engineers begins on 1st September.

The courses are suspended annually for a month during the period of grand manœuvres.

Reports by general officers commanding to be furnished to War Minister on conclusion of course.

Reports in the Infantry, Cavalry, Engineers, and Artillery, to be drawn up from documents furnished by officers commanding regiments, and in accordance with the personal knowledge of the general officer as to the manner in which the instruction is organised and directed in regiments. The points to be dwelt on are results obtained, and progress made by the scholars, improvements in the course, examination, &c.

States to be
sent in.

Commanding officers of regiments must annex the following states :—

- i. A state (according to form) of the course for uneducated soldiers, distinguishing Flemish and Walloons.
- ii. State of regimental school according to form, to be kept up by commandant of regimental school.
- iii. State of night schools, distinguishing sub-officers, corporals and soldiers, to be kept up by officers superintending the night school.
- iv. State of education of soldiers dismissed on furlough during the year, distinguishing Flemish and Walloons, and the three different categories of miliciens, "volunteers" pure, and substitutes.

- v. A similar state of soldiers incorporated during the year. States to be sent in.

Nos. IV and v to be furnished at the end of November, after the departure of the older class of "miliciens," and the incorporation of the youngest; and to be furnished by officers commanding companies, batteries, and squadrons for the information of central staff of regiment.

Attendance at classes for uneducated soldiers is only obligatory for soldiers who cannot either read or write.

Attendance at night schools is obligatory for—

- 1st. Sub-officers under 30 years of age not possessing a Night knowledge of the subjects of the first year of study in schools. the night schools.
- 2nd. Corporals and "brigadiers" under 30 years of age not possessing a knowledge of the subjects taught in the upper class for uneducated soldiers.
- 3rd. Sub-officers admitted as candidates for the rank of sub-lieutenant, who are not up to the standard of the military school.

In all cases those of the 1st and 2nd of the above categories are excused attendance at night schools if they have completed a first term of service of eight years.

The "personnel" of the teaching staff at the camp at Beverloo only, rejoin their battalions. During the interruption of the course the young students of these regiments, and the entire personnel of the other schools will be employed exclusively in theory and military exercises.

VIII. ARTILLERY SCHOOL AND PRACTICE GROUND AT BRASSCHAET.

The artillery instructional establishment is at Brasschaet, Composition. about 12 miles from Antwerp. It comprises a school of gunnery (*école de tir*) for officers and non-commissioned officers, and a practice ground (*polygone d'exercice*) for field and siege batteries.

The establishment is under command of a major-general.

The year is divided into three parts of four months each. Course. Four months are devoted to a course of gunnery for officers and non-commissioned officers. Each regiment of field or siege artillery sends every year three officers and three non-commissioned officers to this course.

Four months are devoted to the practice of field and siege batteries. Every battery in the army attends the polygone every year for 17 days. Each battery has at least three different kinds of practice of not less than 50 or 60 rounds each.

The remaining four months are devoted to the experiments of the Permanent Committee and to the vacation of the staff.

IX. PYROTECHNICAL SCHOOL AT ANTWERP.

Object. The pyrotechnical school was established for the purpose of manufacturing munitions and explosives used in war; to impart practical and theoretical instruction to military artificers; and to form serjeant-majors of artificers.

The War Minister fixes every year before the 1st January the orders to be executed.

The Inspector-General of Artillery is the intermediary between the direction of the pyrotechnical school and the War Minister.

Staff. The staff includes a director, sub-director, a scientific staff of officers and non-commissioned officers, a varying number of civil employés, a company of artificers, &c.

Lieutenants, sub-lieutenants, troop serjeant-majors, "brigadiers," and gunners may be attached to study the work, and receive instruction in the construction of munitions and explosives of war. The War Minister determines the period of the course.

General Regulations.

Service of school.

The service of the school comprises—

I. (a.) Instruction in—

Special fabrications.

Making powder.

Chemistry as applied to explosives in war.

(b.) Lectures.

II. Reception, storage, and preservation of matériel.

III. Fabrication of explosives.

IV. Administration of school.

(Details in Royal Warrant 31st December, 1877.)

X. RIDING SCHOOL AT YPRES.

Riding School at Ypres.

The riding school was instituted with the following objects:—

(a). To thoroughly instruct officers, sub-officers, and "brigadiers" of mounted corps in the various details of duty, and especially in the principles of equitation.

(b). To form instructors and rough riders (*écuyers*), well fitted to impart to regiments a uniform method of instruction in riding, and the training of horses.

(c). To form farriers and shoeing-smiths (*maréchaux-ferrants*) for the army.

Personnel.

The permanent personnel includes—

A field officer as commandant.

A captain for the administration of the squadron.

Three (3) captains or lieutenants of cavalry, as instructors of the divisions of officers.

Three (3) lieutenants or sub-lieutenants of cavalry, assistant instructors.

A lieutenant of artillery as assistant instructor.

Personnel.

A surgeon.

A veterinary surgeon.

A paymaster.

An "adjudant sous-officier."

Three cavalry serjeants and 2 artillery serjeants as sub-instructors.

A serjeant instructor in fencing.

A serjeant, as staff clerk to commissariat.

A serjeant acting as squadron quartermaster-serjeant.

A farrier major.

Four "brigadiers."

A saddler.

A tailor.

A shoeing-smith as instructor.

Three trumpeters or acting trumpeters.

48 troopers and drivers of artillery, at the rate of four per regiment of cavalry and field artillery.

An orderly to each officer.

30 picked school horses (special remount).

Sub-officers, "brigadiers," and trumpeters of the permanent "personnel" are mounted, with the exception of the saddler, tailor, and farriers or shoeing-smiths.

The non-permanent personnel include the undermentioned "Personnel" under instruction.

1st division officers instructors.

2nd " officers under instruction.

3rd " sub-officers instructors (2nd year).

4th " " under instruction.

5th " " "brigadiers" under instruction.

6th " shoeing-smiths under instruction.

In addition to a soldier servant to each officer, two men per regiment of cavalry and field artillery, and a man of the battalion of the train acting as orderlies to students of the 3rd, 4th, and 5th divisions.

The commandant is appointed by Royal Order in Council. Commandant. He has entire direction of all details of duty and instruction. He exercises over the whole "personnel" the authority of an officer commanding a regiment. He is president of all the councils. He corresponds with the officer Commanding-in-chief the cavalry, and with the Inspector-general of Artillery for everything that has special reference to that arm.

The duration of the course for the 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 4th, and Course. 5th divisions is 10 months.

For the 6th (shoeing-smiths), it is 22 months; but the men under instruction may join their regiments after 16 months, if they are fit for the duties of shoeing-smith.

The War Minister decides all matters having reference to the examinations, programme of studies, &c.

A committee (*conseil*) of instruction, of which the com-

Course. mandant is president, and including the three instructors, gives an opinion on all questions submitted to it by the commandants referring to the course of instruction.

Examinations. A commission is appointed every year by the War Minister to hold the final examination of the various divisions. A general officer of Cavalry or Artillery is president, and the three members are: a field officer of Cavalry, a field officer of Artillery, and the Inspecting Veterinary Surgeon.

XI. SCHOOL OF FIELD WORKS FOR INFANTRY.

Practical school of field works. By Royal Warrant, 27th April, 1880, a practical school of field works for infantry was instituted. The school is under the direction of the commandant of engineers, and is under the control of the Inspector-General of Fortifications. It is established at Antwerp, and the object is to train and exercise officers and sub-officers of infantry, selected each year for the purpose of instructing their regiments. A captain, 1 lieutenant or sub-lieutenant per regiment, and two sub-officers of each active battalion of infantry are annually detached to go through the course, or a total of 38 officers and 116 sub-officers.

They remain long enough at the school to learn what is sufficient for imparting instruction.

The instructors are: a major or captain of Engineers for the officers, and a captain or lieutenant of Engineers for sub-officers. Four sub-officers of Engineers attached to the school assist the professors.

CHAPTER XIII.

OFFICERS AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.

Ranks and Relative Ranks.

Army Rank, Command, Promotion, Loss of Rank, Appointment, Pensions, &c., Precedence of Corps, &c.

THE King commands the army (Constitution, Art. 68). Nomination to the grade of officer is by the King on the proposal of the Minister of War. The War Minister is the responsible chief.

Army rank. Army rank is established as follows:—

- a. Private soldier.
- b. Corporal or "brigadier."
- c. Sub-officers—serjeant or "maréchal-des-logis,"* quartermaster-serjeant or quartermaster-serjeant of Cavalry, 1st serjeant, or 1st serjeant of Cavalry, serjeant-major of Infantry or

* Serjeant of mounted corps.

Cavalry, "adjutant de batterie," "adjutant-sous-officier."

d. Officers—Sub-lieutenant, lieutenant, captain, major, lieutenant-colonel, colonel, major-general, lieutenant-general.

Command.

Command, and its responsibility, belong always to the officer highest in rank, and among officers of the same rank, to the senior.

In case of death, recall, retirement, or temporary absence of the officer in command, the senior officer of the highest grade succeeds to the command temporarily.

If Cavalry are acting with Infantry, the commander of the latter, if of equal rank, and without regard to seniority, takes command.

If the Infantry are attached to Cavalry, the opposite course is followed.

Staff officers of all ranks may be employed on posts and detachments. They take command of their equals in rank.

If a Staff officer directs an expedition or reconnaissance without having command of the troops, the officer in command is bound to defer to his opinion, and to make all the necessary dispositions to assist or protect him in his operations.

The authority of a Staff officer directing or even commanding a force in a post or in an operation does not extend to the "personnel," the administration, or the interior discipline of the force.

Promotion.

The manner of promotion laid down by the law of 16th June, 1836, was regulated by the Order in Council of 16th May, 1838.

		To have served at least
Sub-officer to sub-lieutenant	..	{ 6 months as corporal or "brigadier," and 2 years as sub-officer or two years at the Military School, and have passed the final examinations (4 years for artillery and engineers, including 2 years at the school of application).
Sub-lieutenant to lieutenant	..	2 years as sub-lieutenant.
Lieutenant to captain	..	2 years as lieutenant.
Captain to major	..	4 years as captain.
Major to lieutenant-colonel	..	3 years as major.
Lieutenant-colonel to colonel	..	2 years as lieutenant-colonel.
Colonel to Major-General	..	3 years as colonel.
Major-General to lieutenant-general		3 years as major-general.

Promotion to all lower grades, that is to say, to sub-lieutenant, lieutenant, and captain is given, half by seniority, half by selection (*au choix*).

Promotion to field and general officer's rank is by selection of the King.

The time required to pass from one grade to another may be reduced to one-half in time of war for distinguished conduct

Promotion. in the field (*action d'éclat*), duly certified and published in the orders of the day, or when vacancies cannot otherwise be filled up in presence of the enemy.

Honorary rank can be granted to pensioned military men only.

One of the conditions required for promotion by selection in the ranks of sub-lieutenant and lieutenant of Infantry, Cavalry, and Artillery, is that the candidate should have passed the examinations fixed by order of the King. For promotion by seniority in the Artillery and Engineers, a special law, 8th June, 1853, lays down that an examination must be passed by lieutenants to attain the rank of captain.

Loss of rank. By the law of 16th June, 1836, officers may be declared to be reduced from their rank. A court of enquiry examines into the complaint (*charge*) drawn up by the commander of the regiment against the delinquent.

The King pronounces, according to the gravity of the case, the loss or suspension of rank, or compulsory retirement.

Officers may also be placed on the non-active list for disciplinary reasons, or on account of ill-health. An officer on the non-active list is considered "*hors cadre*" or unemployed.

Formerly officers threatened with "non-activity" were not heard in their own defence. Such officers are now authorised to embody their means of justification in a memorandum.

Two laws passed 16th June, 1836, determined—

Standing and position of officers.

- i. The standing and position of officers.
- ii. The causes entailing loss of rank and pay.

The law of 19th May, same year, defined in addition the position of reserve officers, which was confirmed by the laws of 8th June, 1853, 5th April, 1868, and 16th August, 1873.

Rank and appointment.

Rank is conferred by the King, and constitutes the status of an officer (*l'état d'officier*). Officers cannot be deprived of their rank, honours, or pension otherwise than in the manner fixed by law. (Constitution, Art. 124.)

Rank is distinct from appointment (*emploi*). The King gives the appointment, and may revoke it.

Position of officers.

An officer may occupy one of the following positions:—Activity, reserve, "*disponibilité*," non-activity, "*réforme*."

- i. *Activity* is the position of an officer belonging to the establishment (*cadres*) of the army, and in employment.
- ii. *Reserve* applies only to Generals. When in the reserve they can always be employed in any active service not with troops.
- iii. *Disponibilité* applies only to Field and General Officers, and is the position of an officer temporarily unemployed.
- iv. *Non-activity* is the position of an officer off the establishment (*hors cadre*) and unemployed.

- v. Compulsory half pay, or *traitement de réforme*, is in- Position of
separable from the rank which the officer holds; he officers.
cannot be deprived of it except by loss of rank.

An officer is placed on compulsory half pay for excesses Compulsory
which have continued in spite of punishment, for grave and half-pay.
repeated acts of disobedience, for habitual misconduct, for harsh-
ness to an inferior, or for serious neglect in the performance of
duty. The order which places an officer on compulsory half-
pay must state the reason for this step.

An officer may be deprived of rank—

Deprivation
of rank.

- i. In accordance with the sentence of a military tribunal.
- ii. For serious offences not provided for by law, which are
of a nature compromising to the honour and dignity of
the profession of arms or military discipline.
- iii. For public manifestation of opinions hostile to the
constitutional monarchy, to the fundamental institutions
of the State, or to the liberties guaranteed by the Con-
stitution; or,
- iv. For offences against the person of the King.

Any officer guilty of any of the above offences will be
brought before a court of enquiry (*conseil d'enquête*), composed
of seven members, whose rank varies with that of the accused.
The commanding officer of the regiment prosecutes.

If the court hold that the offence has been proved, the King
sentences the offender according to the gravity of the circum-
stances, either to loss or suspension of rank, or to be placed on
compulsory half-pay.

Officers may be placed in non-activity for disciplinary reasons
or on account of ill-health.

Officers who desire to quit the service may, at their own Retirement.
request, be retired by Royal Order in Council. In this case the
retired officer no longer belongs to the army, and may be only
exceptionally permitted to wear the uniform of his rank. The
law of recruiting in Belgium claims as "miliciens" all officers
retired in this manner, and they are bound to appear twice a
year at the inspections by the officers of Gendarmerie.

Appointment of Officers.

The law of 16th June, 1836, assigned (in different propor- Appointment
tions, according to the branches of the service) the appoint- as sub-lieu-
ments in the rank of sub-lieutenant to sub-officers of corps, and tenant.
to students of the military school.

In the Infantry and Cavalry one-third of these appointments Infantry and
go to sub-officers of the arm who have satisfactorily passed an Cavalry.
examination according to a standard laid down by the Minister
of War;* the remaining two-thirds are filled by selection of

* Formerly the final examination at the School of Sub-officers at Hasselt,
abolished January, 1880.

Appointment of officers. the King, from sub-officers and students of the Military School, who have satisfactorily passed the final examinations at that institution.

Artillery and Companies of Engineers. In the Artillery and companies of Engineers two-thirds of the appointments to the rank of sub-lieutenant are assigned to students from the military school; the other third go to sub-officers, who, after an examination, are considered to be fitted for promotion. The appointments of sub-lieutenant in the Engineer Staff are reserved exclusively for students from the Military School.

Artillery Train. In the Artillery Train one-third of the appointments of sub-lieutenant go to sub-officers of the Train, Artillery and Cavalry.

Staff Corps. The Staff Corps is recruited from captains of all arms who have successfully gone through the course at the War School.

Intendance. Appointment to the Corps of Intendance is by competition amongst captain quartermasters, captains of all arms, and officers of Administration of the relative rank of captain, and under 40 years of age. Above the rank of sub-intendant of the 1st class promotion is by selection of the King, amongst the officers of the corps.

Paymasters. The method of appointment as Paymaster in the various corps, and as officers of the Administration Battalion, is not yet definitely settled. Paymasters (*officiers-payeurs*) are now appointed from amongst sub-officers having two years' seniority, and who have passed the prescribed administrative examination.

Medical and Veterinary Services. Officers of the medical service are recruited from doctors of medicine of less than 30 years of age, who have entered into an engagement to serve eight years, and from any army medical students (*élèves médecins de l'armée*), whatever their age, who have obtained their scientific diploma before attaining the age of 30. Dispensers (*pharmaciens*) and veterinary surgeons are selected from army students and civil dispensers under 26 years of age.

As regards promotion of officers of Cavalry and Infantry, it may be remarked that officers who have not passed the examination for promotion by selection are sometimes promoted in their turn, and even out of their turn.

Marriage of officers. Officers can only marry with the consent of the King, and if below the rank of captain, on condition of their proving themselves to be in receipt of an income of 1,600 francs (£64) per annum, in addition to their pay.

Sub-officers and Corporals.

Sub-officers and corporals. Promotion to the rank of corporal of Infantry or Cavalry, and to that of Sub-officer, is in the hands of the Commanding Officer of the Regiment, in accordance with lists approved by the Inspector-General.

Sub-officers may, at the instance of their Commanding Officers, and by sentence of court-martial, be deprived of their rank. The Minister of War pronounces the reduction.

Corporals are sentenced to reduction by Officers Commanding Sub-officers. Regiments.

Sub-officers and corporals might formerly be suspended from rank by commanding officers for a maximum term of three months, during which time they remained with the regiment. This practice has been abolished.

Rank (Hiérarchie) in the Lower Grades.

By Royal Decree, dated 24th January, 1878, the ranks of the lower grades were regulated as follows:—

Rank.		Corresponding positions.
Sub-officers.	I. "Adjudant sous-officier" ..	Students at the military school. Clerks (<i>commis aux écritures</i>). Medical students, 1st class. Student dispensers, 1st class. Conductors of artillery, 1st class. Master artificers. Bandmasters not ranking with sub-lieutenants.
	II. "Adjudants de batterie" ..	Conductors of artillery, 2nd class. Squadron serjeant-majors (<i>maréchaux des logis chefs</i>) of Gendarmerie.
	III. Serjeant-major .. Serjeant-major of cavalry..	Hospital serjeants (<i>infirmiers majors</i>). Magazine superintendents (<i>dépensiers</i>). Master armourers (with the rank of serjeant-major). Trumpet-majors. Quartermaster-serjeants (<i>maréchaux des logis fourriers</i>) of Gendarmerie.
	IV. 1st serjeant.. .. 1st serjeant of cavalry ..	Serjeant of mounted gendarmerie.
	V. Quartermaster-serjeant .. Cavalry quartermaster-serjeant	
	VI. Serjeant and serjeant of cavalry	Porter in the battalion of administration. Cooks (<i>cusiniers</i>). Stokers (<i>lisoniers</i>). Inspectors (<i>surveillants</i>). Master armourers (<i>maître ouvriers armuriers</i>), tailors, shoemakers, boot makers, and saddlers. Hired musicians (<i>musiciens-gagistes</i>). Corporals of gendarmerie.
Corporal or "brigadier."	VII. Corporal of infantry or cavalry	Student musicians, 2nd class. Student "pharmaciens," 2nd class.
	VIII. Corporal of artificers	<i>Brigadier artificier</i> .
IX. Soldier		Hospital attendants (<i>infirmiers</i>). Master workmen of pontoon train (<i>maître ouvriers des pontonniers</i>). Workmen, 1st class (<i>premiers ouvriers</i>). Workmen (<i>ouvriers</i>). Student musicians (<i>élèves-musiciens</i>). Buglers. Trumpeters and acting trumpeters. Farriers. "Gendarmes." "Enfants de troupe."

*Pensions.**Pensions.*

By the law of 24th May, 1838, every person belonging to the military forces who is over 55 years of age, and counts more than 40 years' service (including campaigns), has the right to a pension on retirement. The King, however, has the power of breaking through this rule in certain cases fixed by law.

Limit of age for officers.

A Royal Decree of 18th August, 1855, fixed the limit of age for pensions of officers as follows:—

Lieutenant-generals	..	..	..	65 years.
Major-generals	..	..	..	63 „
Colonels	..	..	..	60 „
Lieutenant-colonels and majors	..	..	..	58 „
Captains, lieutenants, and sub-lieutenants	..	..	..	55 „

The years on active service in the field count double. The time, when not actively employed and without pay, does not count. The time passed in non-activity for disciplinary reasons counts half; that passed on compulsory half-pay (*réforme*) counts a quarter only.

Ten years' active service are counted for those who fought for the national independence during the last four months of the year 1830. These years count only after 16 years' service. Four years' effective service are counted, under the head of preliminary studies, to students of the military school, when they are promoted to the rank of sub-lieutenant.

As regards pensions, sub-officers come under the provisions of the same laws as officers.

Rates of pension.

The rate of pension granted to military men is below that granted to functionaries of other ministerial departments. This inequality has given rise to numerous complaints.

The rates of pension for length of service, or for wounds or infirmities, are fixed as follows:—

	Maximum.			Average after 30 years' service.		
	Francs.	£	s.	Francs.	£	s.
Lieutenant-general	6,300	(252	0)	4,725	(189	0)
Major-General	5,000	(200	0)	3,750	(150	0)
Colonel	3,600	(144	0)	2,700	(108	0)
Lieutenant-colonel	2,760	(110	8)	2,070	(82	16)
Major	2,300	(92	0)	1,725	(69	0)
Captain	1,900	(76	0)	1,425	(57	0)
Lieutenant	1,350	(54	0)	1,012	(40	10)
Sub-lieutenant	1,124	(45	0)	843	(33	15)
Adjutant sub-officer	600	(24	0)	400	(16	0)
Sub-officer	500	(20	0)	300	(12	0)
Corporal	365	(14	12)	240	(9	12)
Private soldier	350	(14	0)	200	(8	0)

Accumulated pensions for military and other services paid by the State are illegal. The right to military pension is forfeited by the individual being condemned to any personal or degrading punishment, during the whole period of the punishment.

In certain cases pensions are accorded on compulsory retirement (*réforme*). Persons in the military service below the rank of officer have the right to these pensions only when they have served the number of years required by the laws on the recruitment of the army. Compulsory retirement.

In Belgium there are no invalid companies. The companies called "sedentary" consist (with the exception of the officers and non-commissioned officers who are old officers and soldiers) of young "miliciens," whose state of health does not permit of their undergoing the fatigues of garrison service. Sedentary companies.

In Belgium there is no law by which certain employment can be given by preference to old sub-officers.

A Bill was brought in at the beginning of the session of 1877, with the object of increasing officers' pensions 20 per cent., and it was thought that officers would be placed on the same footing as civil functionaries. The Bill stated that military pensions are insufficient as compared with those allowed in the armies of other countries in Europe. This Bill was discussed in May, 1880, but not passed. Augmentation of officers' pensions.

There exists in the army a fund (*caisse de secours*) for the widows and orphans of officers, which is kept up by deductions from the pay of all officers. Widow and orphan fund.

This fund is provided by—

1. Deductions of pay from officers in activity.
2. " " Minister of War.
3. " " retired officers.
4. By funds at interest.

Out of these sums are paid pensions to widows and orphans, gratuities for children more than three; funeral expenses of officers, office expenses, &c. On 1st January, 1878, the number of widows pensioned was 601. The fund is managed by a committee of general officers and high civil officials, and the balance sheet published in the "Journal Militaire Officiel." All officers of the Army, whether married or single, have a certain sum (in proportion to rate of pay) annually deducted for the benefit of this fund.

Military Decoration.

By Royal Decree, 22nd December, 1873, a military decoration was established for sub-officers and soldiers of less than 10 years' effective service, and deemed worthy of a special decoration for good conduct, zeal, and devotion. This decoration, which is instead of the chevrons for long service, cannot be detached from the riband. It is also bestowed on military men below the rank of officer, who distinguish themselves by extraordinary services, or by an act of courage or devotion. An addition to pay (20 centimes a day) goes with this decoration, and is independent of the extra pay for good conduct. Military decoration.

Precedence of Corps.

Precedence
of corps.

The order of precedence of corps is as follows :—

War school.
Military school.
Riding school.
Volunteers school; Musketry school.
Intendance.
Medical service.
Administration battalion.
Military auditoriat.
Regiment of Carbineers.
Regiments of Chasseurs-à-pied, in order of numbers.
Regiments of the Line.
Regiment of Grenadiers.
Regiment of Engineers.
Siege Artillery.
Regiments of Chasseurs-à-cheval.
Regiments of Lancers.
Regiments of Guides.
Gendarmerie.
Horse Artillery.
Field Artillery (*monté*).
Train.

Civic
Guard.

Where the Civic Guard and the army act together, the former has the precedence. Certain corps of volunteer firemen, being considered as part of the Civic Guard, have the same privileges.

Guards of
honour.

Guards of honour take post to the right of the palace or mansion where the person to be saluted resides. In this case the Civic Guard is posted on the left of the troops of the Line, so as to be nearer the post of honour.

CHAPTER XIV.

MILITARY JUSTICE AND DISCIPLINE.

MILITARY justice is carried out in time of peace by—

- (I.) Provincial Courts-martial (*conseils de guerre provinciaux*),
 - (II.) The Military Court (*la cour militaire*).
- and in the field by
Courts-martial (*conseils de guerre*) established permanently in
time of war by the King or General-in-Chief.

In invested or besieged towns, or in those placed in a state of siege, the Commandant names a temporary court-martial.

I. *Conseils de guerre* (Courts-martial) on land have cognisance in the first instance of all crimes and offences whatever, committed within their jurisdiction by persons in the military service, or having military relative rank, up to the rank of captain.

These courts are guided by the common law penal code for infractions of that law, and by the military penal code for military offences.

Maritime "conseils de guerre" try all species of offences committed by persons belonging to the national marine up to the rank of lieutenant (*lieutenant de vaisseau*). These courts are guided, according to the nature of the offence, by the common penal code, or by marine penal code.

Provincial Courts-martial are composed of seven officers, of whom one must be above the rank of captain to act as president and direct the deliberations of the court.

The jurisdiction of Provincial Courts-martial is territorial.

The judgments of the above courts are executed without appeal on the order of the general, unless he sees fit to refer the matter to the Sovereign.

For every province, except Limbourg and Luxembourg, there is a Provincial Court-martial, which sits at the chief town of the province.

The military auditor advises the court on all matters of law.

A military provost is attached to each Court-martial to execute its sentences.

Courts-martial are ordinarily convened by the Commandant of the province on the requisition of provincial military auditors, whenever there are one or more cases to try, according to a roster kept by the "commandant de place."

The public ministry is represented before military courts by auditors. These officers combine the functions and rank of "juge d'instruction" and "greffier." Action outside the court is by means of warrant issued by the "commandant de place." The preliminary investigation takes place with the aid of two officers as commissioners, who must afterwards be detailed as members of the Court-martial.

During the sitting the examination must be public and oral. An advocate is permitted to manage the defence.

The permanent Courts-martial, which sit in time of war, also consist of seven members. The President must be a Field Officer, and the members are appointed by the General Officer in command.

The jurisdiction of the permanent Courts-martial (in time of war) is personal; that is to say, they have cognisance of crimes laid to the charge of persons in military service belonging to a mobilised corps, whatever the place of commission of the crime. The execution of the sentence is ordered by the General-in-Chief; the sentence is without appeal, except in case of dispute as to the competence of the court.

II. The Military Court (*la cour militaire*) is the court of appeal from sentences of Courts-martial.

Code pénal militaire, 1814. Arts. 1 to 14.

Code pénal militaire du 27 Mai, 1870.

Code pénal maritime de 1815, modified by law of 13 April, 1851.

Code de procédure pour l'armée de terre, Art. 143.

Code de procédure pour l'armée de mer, Art. 129.

Auditor.

The Military Court (*cour militaire*).

The Military
Court.

It is also the court of first and last instance in the following cases :—

- 1st. Officers of the navy above the rank of first lieutenant; persons who, being subject to marine articles of war, cannot, for some particular reason, be brought before a naval Court-martial, or who must be summoned to appear by a special process; and pilots for offences committed on board vessels of war.
- 2nd. All officers of the land forces of rank superior to that of captain; officers, of whatever rank, having been in command of a place or fort surrendered to the enemy; military auditors before Courts-martial; inspectors and sub-inspectors of administration; clerks attached to the magazines and arsenals of the state; the provost-marshal, provosts, &c.
- 3rd. Every person in the military service, of whatever rank, who by complaining of punishment inflicted by a Field Officer, challenges inquiry into his acts or conduct.

It is to be observed that the competence of military tribunals ceases, whenever a Belgian citizen is implicated in the case, except in certain special cases or in war time.

The Military Court sits at Brussels, and its jurisdiction extends over the whole kingdom. It consists of four effective members or assessors and four substitutes, in addition to the President.

The functions of the public administration are filled by the auditor-general or his substitute; that of clerk of the court by the assistant "greffier" of the court of appeal at Brussels.

The president is a councillor of the civil court of appeal at Brussels, detailed for one year by that court; the four members must be general or field officers selected by lot every month.

The four substitutes are appointed in a similar manner to take the place of any absent members.

Whenever the accused person is directly subject to the jurisdiction of the court, it is composed, besides the president, of two general officers and two colonels selected by lot from the general officers and colonels respectively of the Military District. It is composed of four generals chosen in like manner, if the accused is a general officer.

The annexed table gives composition of military courts in Belgium and officials attached for service of the courts :—

MILITARY JUSTICE.

Seat.	Presidents.	Members.	Substitutes.	Auditor-general or military auditors.	Substitutes for auditors.	Secretary to auditor-general.	"Greffier."	Sheriff's officers.	Provosts.
"Cour militaire," Brussels	1	4	4	1	1	1	1	1	..
Antwerp	..	1	6	..	1	1*	..	1	1
Brussels	..	1	6	..	1	1	..	1	1
"Conseils de guerre" Ghent	..	1	6	..	1	1	..	1	1
Liège	..	1	6	..	1	1	..	1	1
Bruges	..	1	6	..	1	1	..	1	1
Mons	..	1	6	..	1	1	..	1	1
Namur	..	1	6	..	1	1	..	1	1

Discipline and Punishments.

The Belgian Military Code has been assimilated as far as Punishments possible with the Civil Code, the definition of crimes being in most cases the same; but the punishment of some crimes, such, for instance, as treason, or acting as a spy, is punished more heavily if the criminal is military. Flogging in the army was abolished by decree of the provisional government on the 7th October, 1830, as "insulting to Belgian soldiers, and a crime against the dignity of man."

Officers are strictly forbidden to strike the men, under any circumstances whatever.

The purely military punishments are :—

1. For criminal matters, death by shooting; applicable to all.
2. For correctional matters, incorporation in a company of correction; applicable only to sub-officers, corporals, and soldiers.
3. For criminal and correctional matters, military degradation and dismissal; applicable to all, in addition to other punishment.
4. Destitution, similar to our "cashiering;" applicable to officers only, and not to be confounded with military degradation, which is a heavier punishment.

If sentence of death is pronounced without military degradation, the criminal wears to the last the uniform and marks of his rank.

Military degradation involves the loss of rank and all signs of it, and of uniform; incapacity to serve in the army, even as a private soldier, or to wear any decoration or any honourable distinction whatever.

* In 1876 an assistant auditor to the "conseil de guerre" at Antwerp was appointed.

Although there are no articles in the military code defining the punishment of a superior for violence to an inferior, the "*Règlement de Discipline*," which is one of the laws of the state, lays down a scale of punishments for officers which include simple arrests, close arrests, military imprisonment, reprimand from the Minister of War, placing temporarily on reduced pay, and other deprivation of functions culminating in reduction of rank, and specially forbids violence to inferiors, under pain of punishment.

Desertion.

The term desertion includes, in time of war, absence without leave for certain periods; overstaying leave for certain periods; and in the case of soldiers, in addition, the non-arrival at his corps, for certain periods after he was due when called up for service.

Minor offences of all kinds come under the provisions of the "*Règlement de Discipline Militaire*." No differences are made between peace and war. Commanding officers have more power than in the English service, and the junior officers are more frequently punished for acts of irregularity.

Councils of enquiry on officers.

Councils of enquiry (*conseils d'enquête*) take cognisance of breaches of discipline by officers, and may sentence to loss of rank. They consist of seven members, whose rank varies with that of the accused.

Punishments of officers.

Punishments for officers are :

Arrest in the military prison for 15 days at most, solitary or otherwise. Close or open arrest for two months at most. Simple arrest obliges an officer to keep his room, except when obliged to leave it for duty.

Close arrest, or prison, suspends him from all functions of his rank. In this case he surrenders his sword. On the march he marches with his company, but without arms. If there is no prison, the punishment is kept in quarters, a sentry being placed at the door.

Reprimand by the Minister is the next step; and if this is not sufficient, the officer is placed on half-pay, which deprives him of his allowances, &c., and only counts as half time towards pension.

Compulsory half-pay (*traitement de réforme*) is the highest penalty short of cashiering. It is generally used when an officer is considered unfit for the army, but the King does not wish to deprive him of all means of supporting life.

Punishments for sub-officers :

Powers of commanding officers.

Officers commanding regiments, or detachments, cannot reduce sub-officers to the ranks without the finding of a "conseil de discipline," with a major as president, and a sub-officer as one of the members. The commanding officer sentences according to his discretion, there being no absolute rules on the subject; but he is bound in every case to hear the man's defence, and to proportion his punishment fairly to the offence, taking into consideration extenuating circumstances.

Punishments

The modification introduced in 1876 in the measures for

preserving discipline as regards sub-officers, corporals, and and disciplin-
men having had such a good effect, a Royal Decree of 25th ary measures.
January, 1878, laid down the following regulations, to remain
in force until the thorough revision of the military laws is
completed:—

The following is the scale of punishments and disciplinary
measures to which sub-officers, corporals, and private soldiers
are severally liable:—

Punishments may be inflicted by officers commanding corps.

Disciplinary measures are the consequence of sentence by
court-martial, or in some cases by order of the Lieutenant-
General Commanding the Province.

A. SUB-OFFICERS.

Punishments
and disciplin-
ary measures.
Sub-officers.

Punishments :

- i. Military prison, ordinary rations.
- ii. Arrest in barrack room.
- iii. Open arrest in barracks.

Disciplinary measures :

- i. Reduction to the ranks.
- ii. Reduction (*retrogradation*) to a lower grade.
- iii. Extraordinary deduction of pay.
- iv. Deprivation of daily extra pay.
- v. Retention in and recall to service by Articles 87 and
89 of the "Law of the Milice."

B. CORPORALS OF CAVALRY ("BRIGADIERS") AND INFANTRY.

Corporals.

Punishments :

- i. Military prison on ordinary rations.
- ii. Confinement in the guard room cells.
- iii. Confinement to barracks.

Disciplinary measures :

- i. Reduction to the ranks.
- ii. Extraordinary deduction of pay.
- iii. Deprivation of daily extra pay.
- iv. Retention in and recall to service.

C. BUGLERS, TRUMPETERS, AND SOLDIERS.

Punishments :

- i. Solitary confinement.
- ii. Confinement in the guard room
cells.
- iii. Confinement to barracks.

Soldiers.

} With or with-
out punish-
ment drill.

Disciplinary measures :

- i. Discharge from the army as incorrigible.
- ii. Draft to a disciplinary company.
- iii. Reduction from 1st to 2nd class.

Discipline.

- iv. Prohibition from carrying arms.
- v. Extraordinary stoppage of pay.
- vi. Deprivation of daily extra pay.
- vii. Retention in and recall to service.

Guard room arrest is retained for sub-officers guilty of grave offences, making their confinement necessary as a preventive measure.

Acts under the exclusive competence of courts-martial are not to be awarded "punishments."

Two successive punishments may not be awarded for offences of which one is the immediate consequence of the other. When a number of punishable acts have been committed at the same time, they form together a single offence, liable to a single punishment.

Disciplinary measures should always be inflicted simultaneously with punishment for the last offence committed.

Reduction to the ranks (*dégradation*) is applied only to sub-officers for offences of exceptional gravity, or as a consequence of sentence by a court. In the former case a "conseil de discipline" is assembled, which hears the offender in his own defence. If necessary the appeal is referred for decision to the Minister of War. This course will be taken as regards every sub-officer or corporal guilty of desertion.

In case there are not sufficient officers to form a "conseil de discipline," commanders of detachment refer to the "commandant de place," who names one or two officers of another corps. But the number of officers not belonging to the corps may not exceed *two*, except in the case of men belonging to the battalion of administration, to the sedentary companies, to the special companies of engineers, or artillery, &c.

Except under exceptional circumstances, the major commanding the battalion or division of which the accused forms part, may not be president of the court.

When a court cannot be formed without violating the conditions of the two foregoing paragraphs, the accused is sent to head-quarters of the regiment under an escort of the "gendarmérie," which may be demanded by the officer commanding the detachment.

Sub-officers brought forward for reduction may be proposed for exchange to another regiment.

Reduction to a lower grade (*rétrogradation*) as a disciplinary measure is carried out as follows:—

"Adjudants" sub-officers, "adjudants de batterie," serjeant-majors, regimental serjeant-majors of Cavalry, first serjeants of Infantry and Cavalry, quartermaster serjeants of Infantry and Cavalry, revert to the rank of serjeant of Infantry or Cavalry.

Serjeants of Infantry and Cavalry revert to the rank of corporal; for these latter the proposal is submitted to the decision of a court-martial.

Reduction of a sub-officer to a lower grade is pronounced by the Lieutenant-General commanding the Military district. Reduction to a lower grade.

When the reduction takes place at his own request, the sub-officer is not brought to court-martial, and may be reduced to the rank next below that which he holds. The prohibition from carrying arms is no longer a punishment for sub-officers or corporals, and is only retained for private soldiers.

Sub-officers not on duty who make use of their sidearms except in self-defence, are brought before a court-martial, or if they have committed no crime, before a "conseil de discipline," which will pronounce as to the advisability of reducing them ranks, or to an inferior grade.

Under the same circumstances corporals will be reduced to the ranks; buglers, trumpeters, or soldiers will be deprived of the privilege of carrying arms off duty for a certain time. Deprivation of sidearms.

This deprivation of the right to carry arms off duty is also imposed on buglers, trumpeters, or soldiers who get drunk and riotous in public, and on sub-officers and corporals reduced to the ranks for having made improper use of their sidearms.

Any soldier deprived of this privilege cannot have it restored to him until his conduct has for six months been irreproachable, and except under particular and exceptional circumstances he can have neither leave nor indulgence.

When the barrack accommodation is sufficient, every soldier punished by imprisonment, solitary confinement (*cachot*), or cells, has a cell to himself. Cells.

The dress and bedding of prisoners is fixed by the regulations for interior economy. In winter soldiers in prison may have a coverlet at night.

Every prisoner is responsible for the bedding handed over to him by the commander of the guard.

Punishment drill takes place once or twice a day, and is not to occupy less than two hours, nor exceed three hours.

The following only may be subjected to extraordinary deduction as a disciplinary measure:— Extraordinary deductions of pay.

1. Soldiers guilty of habitual drunkenness.
2. Soldiers guilty of illegal absence.
3. Soldiers selling, losing, or damaging their clothing or equipment, either voluntarily or from negligence.
4. Soldiers convicted by a court.
5. Soldiers who voluntarily or negligently cause damage to others or to the state.

The above does not apply to extraordinary deductions from the pay of sub-officers, corporals, and soldiers as an administrative measure.

Soldiers deprived of the privilege of carrying arms for drunkenness are to be placed under extraordinary deduction of pay during the whole time of the deprivation. Deduction of pay.

Extraordinary deductions are 30 centimes (3d.) daily for

sub-officers, and 15 centimes ($1\frac{1}{2}d.$) daily for corporals. Buglers, trumpeters, and soldiers of dismounted troops under extraordinary deduction receive only 5 centimes ($1\frac{1}{2}d.$) a day; of mounted troops, 10 centimes ($1d.$).

Bounty
volunteers.

The deprivation of extra pay is to be applied to bounty volunteers when they misconduct themselves. The War Department is at once informed of this measure, and the reasons for it. If the man's conduct continues good the colonel of the regiment proposes his relief from this deprivation.

Soldiers with good conduct badges, and in flagrant cases those with the military decoration, are recommended for deprivation of their extra pay when they become liable to such deprivation by misconduct.

Detention in
the ranks for
misconduct.

Men retained in the ranks for misconduct are only allowed furlough when they have given sufficient proof of continued good conduct.

Corps of dis-
cipline and
correction.

Men incorporated in the Corps of Discipline and Correction can only be sent on furlough after having served with the regiment the time stipulated by the law of the "milice." But no soldier can be retained under arms after the date of the expiration of his term of service, except in the case where he shall have committed an offence liable to punishment by a court, or to complete the period of a disciplinary punishment.

Incorporation in the Corps of Discipline and Correction applies only to sub-officers, corporals of Cavalry and Infantry, and soldiers. It carries with it reduction to the ranks. The time of incorporation is *one year at least and five years at most, for one offence, or seven in all.*

The following are incorporated in the Corps of Discipline and Correction:—

1st. Soldiers who without having committed crimes which render them liable to trial by court-martial, persist by faults and misconduct which cannot be put a stop to by ordinary punishments, in bringing trouble and bad example into the regiments to which they belong.

2. "Miliciens" recently incorporated who voluntarily mutilate themselves, or who have otherwise rendered themselves unfit for service; and all military persons in active service who have committed the same offence in order to obtain discharge.

Men drafted to the Corps of Discipline and Correction, who give proof of sincere amendment by unvarying good behaviour, and the men relegated to a correctional company who have completed their time may be reinstated in the army.

Volunteers.

Very young volunteers having already been once sentenced by Court-martial, or incorporated in the Corps of Discipline and Correction; or men whose service is about to expire; or incorrigible soldiers of the oldest classes, will not be proposed for incorporation in a disciplinary company.

Severe
punishments.

With the exception of the cases provided for in the instructions, no man may be brought forward for the Corps of Discipline and Correction unless he has been subjected as a soldier

to at least three *severe* punishments during the three previous months. The following are the punishments considered severe in the above sense:—

1st. Fifteen days (or more) cells (*arrêt à la salle du police*).

2nd. Four days (or more) solitary confinement (*cachot*).

Sick soldiers are not to be sent to the Corps of Discipline and Correction.

When a man is sent to the Corps of Discipline and Correction, the sentence is read out in front of the regiment, and he is then handed over to the gendarmerie to be taken to his destination.

In extreme cases men may be summarily dismissed the service.

General Remarks.

From the above it results that suspension for sub-officers is suppressed; reduction to a lower grade is still retained for sub-officers. This is necessary, owing to the extreme youth of the cadres of sub-officers, who often err from inexperience. General remarks.

Articles 87 and 89 of the "Law on the Milice" provide for refusing temporary and unlimited furloughs to men who show themselves unfit; and for recalling "miliciens" on unlimited furlough during 6 or 12 months for offences against military regulations.

Men retained in the ranks for misconduct cannot be kept with the colours after the expiration of their term of service, except in the case where they have rendered themselves liable to trial; or to undergo the remaining portion of a disciplinary punishment.

Discharge from the army as incorrigible is inflicted on men known to be incorrigible or unfit to remain in the ranks, after a previous Council of Enquiry.

These regulations are considered very satisfactory. They guard on one hand the condition and position of sub-officers; on the other, they relieve the commanding officers of the responsibility of reducing sub-officers, while leaving to them the privilege of nominating for promotion and more important duties. The "conseil de discipline," which is the substitute in this delicate matter for the authority of the commanding officer, avoids the danger of precipitate action.

The Minister of War can of his own authority reduce to the ranks any sub-officer or corporal guilty of any grave military offence.

CHAPTER XV.

REMOUNTS.

Remounts. REMOUNTS for Cavalry and Artillery are provided annually either (1) by public contract, (2) by purchase through officers detailed for the purpose by the War Minister, (3) or by commanding officers of regiments.

In the first case a specification is drawn up; in the other cases a ministerial explanatory circular lays down the conditions to be fulfilled as to quality, and the arrangements under which horses will be received.

The annual requirements for remounts of the army are calculated on the following bases:

Two-fifteenths of the effective strength of cavalry horses.

One-seventh of the effective strength of artillery horses.

The average price of late years has been:

				Francs.	£	s.	d.
Light cavalry	..	..	..	876.50	(35	1	3)
Guides	..	..	..	947.50	(37	18	9)
Artillery	..	..	..	918	(37	19	2)
Train..	..	..	..	738	(29	6	8)
Artillery draught horses	..	..	..	650	(26	0	0)

In 1872, by actual trial, commanding officers were able, without much trouble, to complete their cavalry remounts by direct purchase in Belgium. There is no law of conscription for horses.

The draught horses for the artillery are bred in the Ardennes. They are small but very stout and hardy. Sickness amongst them is almost unknown.

The riding horses are obtained from Ireland chiefly. They are usually a very good stamp of animal for the price, but are much more subject to sickness than those of the Ardennes. Danish horses are also purchased.

The horse furniture required for remounts is supplied either by public contract or by direct purchase through a committee appointed in each cavalry and field artillery regiment.

On 31st December, 1875, there were in the army 5,275 saddle horses and 1480 draught horses, making a total of 6,755. The annual loss taking the average from 1861 to 1875, was 994.

CHAPTER XVI.

MUSKETRY.

Musketry. MUSKETRY drill and practice is the object of special care, but few garrison towns have rifle ranges. Regiments are therefore

obliged to go every year to the camp at Beverloo for musketry, Musketry. and to get through the course as rapidly as possible.

Instruction in musketry in each regiment is under the direction and responsibility of the colonel.

Commandants of battalions are responsible to the colonel for the instruction of their battalions.

Captains are responsible to the battalion commandant for the instruction of their companies. They superintend every portion of the instruction.

The theoretical instruction and musketry practice of recruits of the annual levies is under the direction of the "adjutant-major" or a company commandant specially charged with their instruction as soon as they are sufficiently practised in handling their arms.

Officers are required to be conversant with all parts of the musketry regulations; they execute annually individual practices at known and unknown distances, under the direction of the battalion commandants.

Sub-officers and corporals should be able to instruct the men in all the essential principles of musketry; frequent theoretical lectures are given to them by the adjutant-majors.

The musketry regulations are divided into three parts :—

I. (*Theory*). General principles.

Rules for aiming.

Trajectories and dangerous spaces.

Judging distances.

II. (*Instruction*). Aiming drill from tripod.

Positions and aiming.

Management of trigger.

Barrack-room practice (*tir aux capsules à balles*).

Blank firing.

Preparatory and recruits' practice.

Practice at known ranges.

III. (*Application*). Practice at unknown distances.

Skirmishing.

Volley and independent firing (*feux à rangs serrés*).

The prizes each year are :—

1st. A first and second prize to the sub-officers of each Battalion and company prizes.

2nd. A first and second prize to the corporals, buglers, and trained soldiers of each company.

3rd. A first and second prize to the recruits of each battalion.

There is in addition a special prize (*grand prix*) for the sub-officers by regiments, and one for the corporals, buglers, and trained soldiers of each battalion, obtained by competition among winners of first prizes. Regimental prizes.

Shooting prizes.

The first prize consists of a silver ornament representing two crossed rifles with a badge bearing the inscription "prix de tir." It gives the right to ten days' furlough with pay. The second prize consists of two crossed rifles only, with "deuxième prix de tir" on the butts of the rifles. It gives the right to eight days' furlough and pay.

The special (grand) prize consists of the same ornament as the first prize, but of silver gilt and of a larger size, with a badge bearing the inscription "grand prix de tir." The winner receives a sum of 20 francs (16s.), and has the privilege of furlough for fifteen days with pay. If a soldier, he is exempt from fatigue duties for a year.

The prizes are worn on the left sleeve of the tunic or great coat.

Regimental allowance of ammunition.

With the exception of the Rifle Regiment, the number of rounds annually allowed for musketry instruction is as follows:—

BY REGIMENT.

Nature of practice.	Number of cartridges per					
	Sub-officer, corporal, and trained soldier.			Recruit.		
	Capsules.	Blank.	Ball.	Capsules.	Blank.	Ball.
Barrack-room practice	50	..	..	80	..	..
Blank firing	10	..
Preparatory practice	15	..	..	25
Practice at known ranges	50	..	..	50
Practice at unknown distances	20	..	..	20
Skirmishing	15	..	..	15
Firing by companies	3	5	..	5	5
Firing by ranks	2	5	..	5	5
Independent firing	3	..	3	3
	50	5	113	80	23	123

BY BATTALION.**Battalion allowance.**

	Capsules.	Ball cartridge.
Officers' practice	1,000	800
Trial shots (about 3 per practice per company) .. .. .	..	180
Competition of sub-officers .. .. .	..	56
„ corporals, buglers, and trained soldiers .. .. .	..	48
„ recruits .. .. .	..	48
Unforeseen cases .. .. .	..	18
	1,000	1,150

CHAPTER XVII.

WAR MINISTRY—1ST DIRECTION (6TH SECTION).

Statistics and Organisation of Foreign Armies.

This section has the task of centralising all documents to be obtained on the state and organisation of foreign armies, and of following the progress of military science in other countries.

The section comprises two subsections—

(1.) The first has to do with military statistics, rejecting all comparison and scientific discussion. Collection of military statistics.

(2.) The 2nd and more important subsection not only notes all improvements introduced in Military Art, but tabulates them and draws up short statements, from which information may be rapidly gleaned; and compares the general mechanism of modern armies with a view to actual results. The most important articles are transcribed, or translated and classified by order of dates, or according to the subject of which they treat; articles of less importance but useful to consult, are summarised, and entered in books kept for the purpose. Translations, &c.

The "personnel" consists of—

"Personnel."

- 1 chief of section.
- 4 officers translators.
- 4 corporals as copying clerks.

The selection of articles for translation from periodical publications and military works is the duty of the chief of the section. Duties of chief of section.

Besides the above, this officer has to draw up an annual report on changes and discoveries during the year, and to give a summary of the progress of military science during that period.

An officer is attached in addition to draw up succinctly, but completely, a table of all the scientific works of the year, so as to be able to reply in forty-eight hours to any question on such and such a branch of military science and art.

MILITARY CARTOGRAPHICAL INSTITUTE. (WAR MINISTRY.
5TH DIRECTION.)

Mapping work is divided between two sections, the Geodesical and Topographical. Geodesical section.

The Geodesical section comprises—

- 1 Staff Corps captain, in charge of section.
 - 4 Staff Corps captains
 - 1 Staff Assistant
 - 1 captain of Infantry
 - 4 clerks of Infantry
- } for observations.

Topographi-
cal section.

The Topographical section includes—

1 Staff Corps lieutenant-colonel as director; 3 Staff Corps captains in charge of parties; 1 Staff Corps captain and 4 lieutenants of Infantry for levelling; 32 lieutenants of Infantry for preparing plans; 1 captain of Infantry in charge of photographic studio; 1 lieutenant of Infantry employed in photography; 1 captain of Infantry for plotting; 41 lieutenants of Infantry employed in the same section; 1 captain of Infantry, controller of accounts; 7 sergeants and corporals, draughtsmen; 5 sergeants employed in plotting; 24 soldiers, artisans, printers, orderlies, &c.

The "personnel" of the Topographical section comprises in addition certain civil employés, permanently or provisionally attached.

The permanent civil employés are:—

1 chief draughtsman, with the title of "sous-chef de bureau," with an annual salary of £144.

1 engraver, with same title and salary of £132.

1 engraver, with title of 1st class employé, and salary of £100.

1 draughtsman, with same title, and salary of £100.

1 draughtsman employé, 2nd class, and salary of £80.

14 civil employés are attached to the topographical section temporarily. viz.:—

			£	s.	
4 engravers at	..	..	100	0	per annum.
2 "	..	..	80	0	"
1 "	..	..	72	0	"
2 draughtsmen at	..	..	65	12	"
1 "	..	..	60	0	"
1 "	..	..	56	0	"
2 "	..	..	48	0	"
1 "	..	..	36	0	"

The civil staff comprises in addition:—

1 master printer at 5s. 10d. a day; 2 printers, 6½d. an hour; 2 printers, 6d. an hour; 1 printer, 5½d. an hour.

The personnel of the topographical section is divided into eight sub-divisions:—

- 1st Sub-division : Levelling.
- 2nd " : Preparing plates.
- 3rd " : Photographic studio.
- 4th " : Enlarging to 10000.
- 5th " : Drawing.
- 6th " : Engraving.
- 7th " : Printing.
- 8th " : Dépôt for matériel and instruments.

The commandant of the section, with the assistance of the heads of parties (*brigades*) and heads of departments, is charged with general supervision of work and discipline.

Each sheet of the engraved map of 10000 contains eight plates.

The work on the ground begins on 1st April, and ought to be over by 1st October. The plans are made on a scale of

$\frac{1}{100000}$: each plate, .50 metre by .40 metre (19.68 in. by Topographical section.
15.74 in.), contains a superficial area of 8,000 hectares
(30 $\frac{1}{4}$ square miles).

The Staff Corps officers receive when at work an allowance of £51 4s. per annum, but out of this they have to pay two men for chaining.

The plates should be completed by 20th December, and are then photographed.

Two proofs are drawn, one at $\frac{1}{100000}$, and the other at $\frac{1}{100000}$; the former is sent to be engraved; the latter is used for a special map on that scale.

The rough is then returned to the officer to be coloured, and for details to be filled in.

The direction of the work is confided to the head of the party (*chef de brigade*), who, after examining, comparing, and making corrections, signs the different pieces of work, and remits them to the commandant of the topographical subsection. They are then re-examined and placed in the record office.

APPENDIX I.

ESTABLISHMENTS OF BELGIUM ARMY ON PEACE* FOOTING.

TABLE I.—*Infantry.*

- 1 Regiment of Rifles or Carabiniers.
 1 " Grenadiers.
 3 " " Chasseurs-à-Pied."
 14 " of the Line.
 2 Sedentary Companies.
 1 Corps of Discipline and Correction.
 1 School of Soldiers' Children.
 Officers unattached.

A regiment of Carabiniers has 4 active battalions and 2 non-active battalions. The other regiments have 3 active battalions and 1 non-active battalion. Each regiment has in addition a *dépôt* composed of a staff and a company. The battalions have 4 companies.

Peace Establishment of Companies.

Ranks.	Companies.						
	Active battalions of Grenadiers and Carabiniers.	Active battalions of Line Regiments and Chasseurs.	Non-active battalions.	Dépôts.	Corps of Discipline and Correction.	Sedentary companies.	School for Soldiers' Children.
Captain	1	1	1	1	1	1	..
Lieutenants or Sub-lieutenants	3	3	3	3	4	3	..
	4	4	4	4	5	4	..
Serjeant-Major	1	1	1	1	1	1	..
1st Serjeant	1	1	..	..	..	..	..
Quartermaster-Serjeant ..	1	1	1	1	1	1	..
Serjeants	5	5	4	4	9	33	..
Corporals	10	10	6	8	16	16	..
Buglers	3	3	1	2	2	2	..
Soldiers	93	70	..	..	200	60	..
Soldiers' children .. ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	250
	114	91	13	16	229	113	250

* The war establishments of the Belgian Army are fixed previously to mobilisation, on war breaking out.

UNATTACHED OFFICERS.

Captains	20	..	..	..	..
Lieutenants	20	..	..	..	..
Total.. .. .	40	..	..	..	..

TABLE II.—*Cavalry.*

2 Regiments of "Chasseurs."

4 Regiments of Lancers.

2 Regiments of Guides.

Each Regiment has 4 active squadrons and a reinforcing squadron.

Staff of a Regiment.

Ranks.	Men.	Horses.	
Colonel	1	3	There is in each regiment of cavalry :— 1 Captain Quartermaster 1 Paymaster 1 Captain Clothing Officer 1 Regimental Surgeon 1 Battalion " 1 1st class Veterinary Surgeon 1 2nd class " 1 3rd class " "
Lieutenant-Colonel	1	2	
Majors	2	4	
Captain Commandant "Adjutant-major"	1	2	
Lieutenant "Adjutant-major"	1	2	
Lieut. or Sub-Lieut. Standard Bearer ..	1	2	
	7	15	
"Adjudants" Sub-officers	2	2	
Squadron Serjeant-major as Clerk	1	1	
Serjeant (store)	1	..	
Trumpet-major	1	1	
Trumpet "brigadier"	1	1	
Serjeant-armourer	1	..	
Master tailor, Bootmaker, Saddler	3	..	
	10	5	

Establishment of a Squadron.

Ranks.	Men.	Horses.	
Captain Commandant	1	2	
Second Captain	1	2	
Lieutenants	2	4	
Sub-Lieutenants	2	4	
	6	12	
Squadron Serjeant-major	1	1	
" Quartermaster serjeant	1	1	
Serjeants	8	8	
"Brigadiers"	12	12	
Trumpeters	3	3	
Farriers	2	2	
Troopers, 1st class	24	24	
" 2nd class	69	69	
" 2nd class (dismounted)	20	..	
	140	120	

TABLE III.—*Artillery.*

Special Staff.
 4 Regiments of Field Artillery.
 3 Regiments of Siege Artillery.
 4 Special Companies, viz.:
 1 Pontoon Company,
 1 Company Artificers,
 1 „ Artillery Artisans,
 1 „ Armourers.

The 1st and 3rd Field Regiments have 8 Mounted Batteries and 2 Reserve Batteries. The second and 4th Field Regiments have each 7 Mounted Batteries, 2 Horse Artillery Batteries, and 1 Reserve Battery. The 5th, 6th, and 7th Siege Regiments have 16 Siege Batteries, a Reserve Battery, and a Depot Battery.

Special Artillery Staff.

	Officers.	N.C.Os. and employés.	Horses.
Colonels	5	..	10
Lieutenant-colonels	5	..	5
Majors	5	..	5
Captains commandant	7	..	7
„ 2nd class	11	..	11
Majors commandant in charge of matériel	5	..	..
“Gardes d'artillerie”	25	..	..
Conductors, 1st class .. .. .	..	30	..
„ 2nd class .. .. .	..	30	..
Master artificers .. .. .	..	5	..
Principal controllers .. .. .	..	1	..
Controllers, 1st class .. .. .	..	3	..
„ 2nd class .. .. .	..	3	..
Inspectors .. .. .	..	4	..
Total	63	76	38

Establishment of Batteries and Companies.

Ranks.	Batteries.												Depôts of Pontoon Companies.				Special Companies.			
	Horse.			Mounted.			Siege.			Reserve Siege.			Reserve Mounted.			Depôts of Pontoon Companies.		Special Companies.		
	Horses.			Horses.			Horses.			Horses.			Horses.			Men.		Artillery.		
	Men.	Saddle.	Draught.	Men.	Saddle.	Draught.	Men.	Saddle.	Draught.	Men.	Saddle.	Draught.	Men.	Saddle.	Draught.	Men.	Horses.	Artillery.	Artillery.	
Captains Commandant ..	1	2	..	1	1	2	1	1	2	1	..	..	1	1	..	1	1	1	1
Second Captains ..	1	1	..	1	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	1	1
Lieutenants ..	(a) 3	6	..	3	6	..	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Sub-Lieutenants ..	(b) ..	..	..	..	..	..	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1
Battery "Adjutants" ..	5	9	..	5	9	..	3	..	..	3	3	..	3	3	..	6	6	4	4
Battery Sergeant-majors ..	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	..	..	1	1	..	1	1	..	..	..	1	1
" Quartermaster Sergeants ..	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	1	
Sergeants ..	6	6	..	6	6	..	5	..	..	6	6	..	6	6	..	10	10	14	8
Sergeant Artificer (<i>constructeur</i>) ..	..	6	..	..	2	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	1	..	..	..
" Mounted ..	..	6	..	..	2	..	6	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
" Dismounted ..	..	..	..	4	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
" Brigadiers " { Artificers (<i>artificiers</i>) ..	3	3	..	3	..	..	2	..	..	6	..	..	6	..	..	4	..	12	10
Trumpeters ..	2	2	..	2	2	..	2	..	..	2	2	..	2	2	..	2	..	2	2
{ Saddlers ..	1	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Artisans { Wheelers ..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	..	1	1
{ Blacksmiths ..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	..	1	1
{ Carpenters ..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	..	1	1
Farriers ..	2	..	..	1	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Master workmen ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Gunner armoured, 1st class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	20	..	20	20
" " 2nd class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	12	96
Gunner artisans, 1st class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	50	60
" " 2nd class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	93	..
Pontoon Company, 1st class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
" " 2nd class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Gunners, 1st class ..	14	42	40	8	..	..	8	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	20	..	20	60
" 2nd class ..	70	..	..	26	..	..	44	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Drivers, 1st class ..	..	..	..	30	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	72	..	..	..
" 2nd class ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Acting (<i>élèves</i>) trumpeters ..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..

(a) The unarmoured batteries have 1; the even batteries 2.

(b) The unarmoured batteries have 2; the even batteries 1.

(a) The uneven batteries have 1; the even batteries 2.
 (b) The uneven batteries have 2; the even batteries 1.

Establishment of Regiments.

Ranks.	1st and 3rd Regiments.			2nd and 4th Regiments.			5th, 6th, and 7th Regts.		
	Men.	Horses.		Men.	Horses.		Men.	Horses.	
		Saddle.	Draught.		Saddle.	Draught.			
Colonel	1	3	..	1	3	..	1	2	There are in each field reg ment :— 1 Captain Quartermaster 1 Paymaster 1 Captain Clothing Officer 1 Regimental Surgeon 1 Battalion 1 Veterinary " 1st cla 1 " " 2nd cla
Lieutenant-Colonel	1	2	..	1	2	..	1	2	
Major	4	8	..	3	6	..	5	5	
Captain Commandant, "adjudant-major"	1	2	..	1	2	..	1	1	
Lieutenant "adjudant-major" ..	1	2	..	1	2	..	1	1	
Captain Commandant Instructor ..	1	2	..	1	2	..	..	..	1 Captain Clothing Officer
Captain Commandants	10	18	..	10	19	..	18	..	1 Regimental Surgeon
Adjutants	8	8	..	9	9	..	..	..	1 Battalion
Lieutenants	14	26	..	14	27	..	18	..	1 Veterinary " 1st cla
Lieutenants	14	26	..	15	29	..	18	..	1 " " 2nd cla
	55	97	..	56	101	..	63	11	In each siege regiment :— 1 Captain Quartermaster 1 Paymaster 1 Captain Clothing Officer 1 Regimental Surgeon 2 Battalion Surgeons
Adjudants" Sub-Officers	2	2	..	2	2	..	2	..	
Ant-clerk	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	
Ant-artificer	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	
Ant (store)	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	
Adjutant-major	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	..	
Adjutant-"brigadier"	1	1	..	1	1	..	1	..	
Workmen with { Armourer	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	
Rank of serjeant { Tailor	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	
Maréchal des logis { Bootmaker	1	..	..	1	..	..	1	..	
Saddler	1	..	..	1	..	..	..	..
鞍工	2	..	..	2	..	..	..	..
Adjutants	10	10	..	10	10	..	16	..	
Serjeant-majors (maréchaux des is chefs)	10	10	..	10	10	..	18	..	
Quartermaster-serjeants	10	10	..	10	10	..	18	..	
Ants	60	60	..	60	60	..	90	..	
Artificers { Mounted	20	20	..	28	28	..	..	..
Dismounted	40	..	..	32	..	..	106	..	
Artificers	30	..	..	30	6	..	32	..	
Trumpeters	20	20	..	20	20	..	34	..	
Saddlers	10	..	..	10	..	..	..	..
Whealers	10	..	..	10	..	..	17	..	
Blacksmiths	10	..	..	10	..	..	17	..	
Carpenters	10	..	..	10	..	..	17	..	
Artificers	10	..	..	12	..	..	..	..
1st class	64	..	..	84	..	..	128	..	
2nd class	208	..	..	322	..	80	704	..	
1st class	240	..	320	210	..	280	..	..
2nd class .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	..	2	..	
Trumpeters .. .. .	..	..	..	..	..	..	..	..
Totals	775	134	320	881	232	360	1209	..	

TABLE V.—*Engineers.*

The Engineers form a Regiment composed of 3 Battalions of Sappers and Miners of 4 companies each and a Depôt. To this Regiment are attached for purposes of administration only 5 special companies, viz.:

- 1 Railway Company,
- 1 Field Telegraph Company,
- 1 Company Fortress Telegraphists and Artificers,
- 1 Fortress Pontoon Company.
- 1 Company Artisans.

Special Staff.

Ranks.	Men.	Horses.
Colonels	3	6
Lieutenant-colonels	6	6
Majors	6	6
1st Captains	17	} 7
2nd „	11	
Lieutenants	11	
Total	54	25
<i>Warrant Officers (gardes du génie).</i>		
Principal W.O., 1st class	7	..
„ „ 2nd class	7	..
Warrant Officers, 1st class	12	..
„ „ 2nd class	12	..
„ „ 3rd class	12	..
Lock keepers (<i>éclusiers</i>)	5	..
“Portiers-consignes”	8	..
Total	63	..

Establishment of Staff.

Ranks.	Regt.		Depôt.	
Colonel	1	2	..	..
Lieutenant-Colonel	1	2	..	..
Majors	3	6	1	1
Captain “Adjuant-major”	1	1	..	..
Lieutenants	3	..	..	..
Lieut. or Sub-Lieut. (Arms Officer) .. .. .	..	..	1	..
	9	11	2	1
“Adjuants” Sub-Officers	3	..	..	..
Bugler Serjeant	1	..	..	..
Bugler Corporals	3	..	..	..
Serjeant-Major Clerk	1	..	..	..
Serjeant Armourer .. .. .	..	..	1	..
Master Tailor and Shoemaker .. .. .	..	..	2	..
Serjeant Storekeeper .. .. .	..	..	1	..
	8	..	4	..

There are in the Regiment of Engineers:—
 1 Captain Quartermaster,
 1 Paymaster,
 1 Captain Clothing Officer,
 1 Regimental Surgeon,
 2 Battalion Surgeons.

Establishment of Companies.

Ranks.	Companies.					
	Active.	Telegraph.	Railway.	Pontoon.	Artisans.	Depôt.
1st Captain	1	1	1	1	1	1
2nd Captain	1	1	1	1	..	..
Lieutenant	1	1	1	1	1	1
Sub-Lieutenant ..	1	1	1	1	1	1
	4	4	4	4	3	3
Serjeant-Major	1	1	1	1	1	1
Serjeants	6	6	6	6	6	4
Quartermaster-Serjeant ..	1	1	1	1	1	1
Corporals	10	8	8	8	8	8
Buglers	3	2	2	2	2	2
Soldiers (1st Class) ..	21	21	21	21	21	..
„ (2nd Class) ..	39	39	39	39	39	..
	81	78	78	78	78	16

APPENDIX II.

Pay of officers.

PAY OF OFFICERS.

GENERAL STAFF.

General Officers. (Section of Activity.)

Ranks.	Yearly pay.
	£
Lieutenant-General	740
Major-General	508

General Officers. (Section of Reserve.)

Rank.	Yearly pay.
	£
Lieutenant-General employed on active service not with troops (<i>sédentaire</i>)	592
Lieutenant-General unemployed	444

STAFF CORPS.

Colonel	380
Lieutenant-Colonel	284
Major	252
Captain, 1st Class	204
„ 2nd Class	176

Extra Pay.

Major-General in command of a Division, or em- ployed as Inspector-General of Artillery or Engineers	80
Colonel in command of a Brigade	42 8s.

Officers of Infantry, Engineers, Artillery, and Artillery Staff, appointed aides-de-camp or orderly officers to a general, receive additional pay equal to the difference between the pay of their branch of the service and that of their rank in mounted corps.

Provincial and Garrison Staff.

Ranks.	Yearly pay.	Remarks.
<i>Provincial Staff.</i>		
	£ s. d.	
Major-General or Colonel commanding a province.	406 8 0	
<i>Garrison Staff.</i>		
"Commandant de place."		
{ 1st Class	300 0 0	
{ 2nd "	240 0 0	
{ 3rd "	200 0 0	
Town Major	180 0 0	
Garrison Adjutant.		
{ 1st Class	140 0 0	
{ 2nd "	96 0 0	
{ 3rd "	84 0 0	
<i>Extra Pay.</i>		
"Commandant de place" in command of a province.	80 0 0	
Captain, Lieutenant, or Sub-Lieutenant of Infantry when aide-de-camp to officer commanding a province.	20 0 0	
<i>Chaplains.</i>		
Beverloo Camp	144 0 0	
Brussels, Liège, Antwerp, Ghent	126 0 0	
Mons, Namur, Tournai	92 0 0	
Vilvorde	88 0 0	
Bruges, Charleroi, Louvain	84 0 0	
Alost	53 0 0	
Ath and Ypres	35 0 0	
Hasselt	26 0 0	
Diest, Malines, and Termonde	18 0 0	
Arlon, Audenarde, Bouillon, Brasschaet		
Courtrai, Dinant, Huy, Lierre		
Liefkenshoek, Lillo, Mariembourg		
<i>Assistant Chaplains.</i>		
Antwerp and Beverloo Camp	80 0 0	
<i>I. INFANTRY.</i>		
Colonel	340 0 0	Captains Adjutants-Major (mounted) of regiments draw additional pay, amounting to £20 per annum.
Lieutenant-Colonel commanding a Regiment.	302 8 0	
Lieutenant-Colonel	260 0 0	Captains Adjutants-Major of battalion draw the pay of their class.
Major	220 0 0	
Captain { 1st Class	152 0 0	Lieutenants and Sub-Lieutenants, porte-drapeau (ensigne), or officiers d'armement draw the pay of their rank.
{ 2nd "	136 0 0	
{ 3rd "	126 0 0	
Lieutenant	96 0 0	

Artillery (continued), Train, Engineers, Battalion of Administration.

Ranks.					Yearly pay.		Remarks.	Pay of officers.
III. ARTILLERY—continued.					£	s. d.		
Garde d'Artillerie.	{	Principal	..	..	184	0 0		
		1st Class	..	..	148	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	110	0 0		
		3rd „	..	..	84	0 0		
<i>Sub-Officers and Employés of Artillery Staff.</i>								
Conductor of Artillery.	{	1st Class	..	..	54	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	47	0 0		
Master Artificer		..	..	..	54	0 0		
Controller of Arms.	{	Principal	..	..	126	0 0		
		1st Class	..	..	107	0 0		
Overseer of arms	{	2nd „	..	..	88	0 0		
		..	..	..	75	0 0		
IV. BATTALION OF THE TRAIN.								
Major ..	..	..	..	..	252	0 0		
Captain commandant..	..	..	..	..	204	0 0		
2nd Captain.	{	1st Class	..	..	176	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	160	0 0		
Lieutenant ..	..	..	..	..	180	0 0		
Sub-Lieutenant ..	..	..	..	..	118	0 0		
V. ENGINEERS.								
Colonel ..	..	..	..	..	380	0 0		
Lieutenant-Colonel commanding a regiment	..	..	..	..	326	8 0		
Lieutenant-Colonel ..	..	..	..	..	284	0 0		
Major ..	..	..	..	..	252	0 0		
1st Captain ..	..	..	..	..	184	0 0		
2nd Captain.	{	1st Class	..	..	156	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	140	0 0		
Lieutenant ..	..	..	..	..	115	0 0		
<i>Employés of Engineer Staff.</i>								
Garde du Génie.	{	Principal { 1st Class	..	..	128	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	112	0 0		
Garde écluser (lock-keeper)	{	1st Class	..	..	101	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	84	0 0		
Portier-consigne	{	3rd „	..	..	72	0 0		
		..	..	..	53	0 0		
Barrack keeper*		..	..	..	16	0 0		
VI. BATTALION OF ADMINISTRATION.								
Field officer ..	..	..	..	..	204	0 0		
Officer of Adminis- tration.	{	1st Class	..	..	120	0 0		
		2nd „	..	..	100	0 0		
		3rd „	..	..	88	0 0		
		4th „	..	..	72	0 0		

* The pay of barrack keepers is fixed by the Minister of War in proportion to their duties or the importance of their position.

Battalion of Administration (*continued*), Gendarmerie, Medical Service.

Pay of officers.	Ranks.	Yearly pay.	Remarks.
VI. BATTALION OF ADMINISTRATION— <i>continued.</i>		£ s. d.	
<i>Employés.</i>			
Clerks.	{ 1st Class	58 0 0	
	{ 2nd „	48 0 0	
Hospital nursing sisters	.. .. .	36 0 0	
VII. GENDARMERIE.			
Colonel	.. .. .	400 0 0	
Lieutenant-Colonel	.. .. .	300 0 0	
Major ..	.. .. .	264 0 0	
Captain.	{ 1st Class	220 0 0	
	{ 2nd „	188 0 0	
Lieutenant	.. .. .	150 0 0	
Sub-Lieutenant	.. .. .	118 0 0	
<i>Medical Service.</i>			
“Pharmacia- cien”	{ In chief (ranking with Lieutenant-Colonel)	260 0 0	
(dispenser),	{ Principal (Major)	204 0 0	
Veterinary	{ In chief (ranks with Lieu- tenant-Colonel)	260 0 0	
Surgeon.	{ Principal	204 0 0	

PAY in "Disponibilité," Non-activity, and on Compulsory
Half-pay (*Réforme*).

Ranks.		Yearly Pay.				
		"Disponi- bilité."	Non-activity.		"Réforme."	
			On account of health.	As a mea- sure of discipline.		
		£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	
Lieutenant-General		493 4 0	444 0 0	296 0 0	148 0 0	Subaltern officers of the Medical Service and bat- talion of Adminis- tration draw pay in non- activity and "ré- forme" accord- ing to their re- lative army rank.
Major-General						
Chief Intendant						
Inspector-General Medical Service						
Colonel ...	Gendarmerie... ..	264 0 0	255 0 0	170 0 0	85 0 0	
	Staff Corps					
	Cavalry					
	Artillery	253 4 0				
	Engineers					
Colonel ...	Intendant, 1st Class...		195 0 0	130 0 0	65 0 0	
	Infantry					
	Principal Surgeon,	226 8 0				
	1st Class					
	Gendarmerie... ..	200 0 0				
Lieutenant Colonel	Staff Corps		195 0 0	130 0 0	65 0 0	
	Cavalry					
	Artillery					
	Engineers	189 4 0				
	Intendant, 2nd Class					
Lieutenant Colonel	Principal Surgeon,		195 0 0	130 0 0	65 0 0	
	2nd Class					
	Infantry	173 4 0				
	Gendarmerie	176 0 0				
	Staff Corps					
Lieutenant Colonel	Cavalry		168 0 0	110 0 0	55 0 0	
	Artillery					
	Train					
	Engineers	168 0 0				
	Sub-Intendant, 1st					
Lieutenant Colonel	Class		168 0 0	110 0 0	55 0 0	
	Regimental Surgeon,					
	1st Class					
	Infantry					
	Commandant Artil-					
Major ...	lery matériel	146 8 0	165 0 0	110 0 0	55 0 0	
	Principal Dispenser...					
	Inspecting Veterin-					
	ary Surgeon					
	Superintending Offi-	136 0 0				
Major ...	cer of Administra-		165 0 0	110 0 0	55 0 0	
	tion					
	Principal "Garde	122 8 0				
	d'Artillerie"					
	1st Class*	—				
Captain ...	2nd "	—	114 0 0*	76 0 0	38 0 0	
	3rd "	—	102 0 0	68 0 0	34 0 0	
	3rd "	—	94 8 0	63 0 0	31 8 0	
Lieutenant		—	72 0 0	48 0 0	24 0 0	
Sub-lieutenant		—	63 0 0	42 0 0	21 0 0	

* Including Sub-intendants, 2nd Class; Gardes d'Artillerie, 1st Class; Dispensers, 1st Class; and Veterinary Surgeons, 1st Class.

All officers in the Belgian Army are subject to a deduction in proportion to rate of pay for benefit of the Widow and Orphan Fund, and also to a small deduction for medicines.

CENTRAL ADMINISTRATION OF WAR MINISTRY.

Central Administration
of War
Ministry.

The staff, grades, and salaries of the civil functionaries and employes of the central administration of the War Ministry are fixed as follows:—

Numbers.	Grades.	Annual Salary.		
		Minimum.	Medium.	Maximum.
3	Sub-director or chief of division.	£ 256	£ 284	£ 312
8	Heads of section.. ..	176	196	216
9	Sub-heads of section	132	144	156
12	Employés, 1st class	96	108	120
18	Employés, 2nd class	56	72	88
50				

The Minister has the power to distribute pecuniary rewards to employés (1st and 2nd Class) if the credit allowed for the personnel of the civil administration is sufficient.

Supernumeraries may be employed to be paid out of the credit allowed for the Central War Administration.

The posts of supernumeraries and employés (2nd Class) are given after competitive examination between military and civilian candidates.

DAILY PAY and Deductions of Sub-officers and Soldiers.

Ranks.				Total pay.	Division.		
					Deducted for clothing fund.		Pay proper.
I. INFANTRY.				s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	
"Adjutant" sub-officer				2 8½	0 7½	2 1.	
Orderly Room	{	Grenadiers	1 11½	0 5	} 1 6½		
Clerk		Other regiments	1 11½	0 4½			
Magazine Ser-	{	Grenadiers	1 6½	0 5½	} 1 1½		
jeant		Other regiments	1 6½	0 4½			
Bugle Serjeant		1 9½	0 6½	1 3		
Armourer ..	{	Serjeant-Major.. .. .	1 11½	0 4½	1 6½		
		Serjeant	1 6½	0 4½	1 1½		
Serjeant-Major	{	Grenadiers	1 11½	0 5	} 1 6½		
		Corps of discipline and cor-					
		rection					
		Carabiniers					
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
1st Serjeant ..	{	Infantry of the line	1 11½	0 4½	}		
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
		Corps of discipline and cor-					
		rection					
Serjeant and	{	Carabiniers	1 8	0 5	}		
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
Quartermaster-	{	Corps of discipline and cor-	1 6½	0 5½	}		
		rection					
		Carabiniers					
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
Serjeant. ..		Sedentary companies	1 6½	0 4½	1 1½		
Bugle Corporal		0 10½	0 3½	0 7		
Master tailor and shoemaker		0 8½	0 3½	0 5½		
Corporal ..	{	Grenadiers	0 8½	0 3½	0 5½		
		Corps of discipline and cor-					
		rection					
		Carabiniers					
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
Bugler ..	{	Infantry of the line	0 8½	0 3½	0 5½		
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
		Corps of discipline and cor-					
		rection					
Soldier.. ..	{	Carabiniers	0 7½	0 3½	0 3½		
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
2nd Class..	{	Carabiniers, 1st Class	0 7	0 3½	0 3½		
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
1st Class..	{	Carabiniers, 1st Class	0 6½	0 3½	0 3½		
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
2nd Class..	{	Carabiniers, 2nd Class	0 6	0 3½	0 2½		
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					
2nd Class..	{	Carabiniers, 2nd Class	0 6	0 3½	0 2½		
		"Chasseurs-à-pied"					
		Infantry of the line					
		Sedentary companies					
		Grenadiers					

DAILY PAY and Deductions of Sub-officers and Soldiers—*cont.*

Ranks.	Total pay.	Division.	
		Deduct for clothing fund.	Pay proper.
II. CAVALRY.		s. d.	s. d.
"Adjutant" sub-officer	2 8½	0 7½	2 1
Orderly Room { Chasseurs and Lancers	2 4½	0 5	} 1 11½
Clerk .. { Guides	2 4½	0 5½	
Magazine Squadron { Chasseurs and Lancers	1 10	0 5	} 1 5
Sergeant-Major. { Guides	1 10½	0 5½	
Trumpet-Major { Chasseurs and Lancers	2 0½	0 6	} 1 6½
Armourer { Guides	2 0½	0 6	
Squadron Serjeant { Chasseurs and Lancers	1 10	0 5	} 1 5
jeant .. { Guides	1 10½	0 5½	
Squadron Serjeant-Major { Chasseurs and Lancers	2 4½	0 5	} 1 11½
jeant-Major .. { Guides	2 4½	0 5½	
1st Serjeant .. { Chasseurs and Lancers	1 11½	0 5	} 1 6½
.. { Guides	1 0½	0 5½	
Serjeant and Quartermaster-Serjeant { Chasseurs and Lancers	1 10	0 5	} 1 5
.. { Guides	1 10½	0 5½	
Trumpet Corporal { Chasseurs and Lancers	1 5½	0 5	} 1 0½
.. { Guides	1 5½	0 5½	
Master tailor, master bootmaker, master saddler ..	0 8½	0 4	0 4½
Corporal of Cavalry { Chasseurs and Lancers	0 10½	0 4	0 6½
.. { Guides	0 11	0 4½	0 6½
Trumpeter .. { Chasseurs and Lancers	1 3½	0 5	} 0 10½
.. { Guides	1 4	0 5½	
Farrier .. { Chasseurs and Lancers	0 8½	0 4	0 4½
.. { Guides	0 9	0 4½	0 4½
Trooper, 1st Class { Chasseurs and Lancers	0 8½	0 4	0 4½
.. { Guides	0 9	0 4½	0 4½
Trooper, 2nd Class { Chasseurs and Lancers	0 8½	0 4	0 4½
.. { Guides	0 8½	0 4½	0 4½
III. ARTILLERY.			
"Adjutant" sub-officer	2 8½	0 7½	2 1
Squadron Serjeant-Major.. { 2nd and 4th Field Regiments ..	2 4½	0 5	1 11½
Artificer .. { 1st and 3rd Siege Regiments	2 3½	0 5	1 10½
Orderly Room Clerk .. { Field Regiments	2 4½	0 5	1 11½
Squadron Serjeant-Major. { Siege	2 1	0 5	1 8
Magazine Serjeant-Major	1 8	0 5	1 3
Trumpet-Major	2 0	0 6	1 6
Serjeant Armourer	1 10	0 5	1 3
.. { Company of artisans	2 8	0 5	2 3
"Adjutant de Batterie" .. { Field Regiments { Horse Artillery ..	2 5½	0 5	2 0½
.. { Reserve ..			
.. { Siege Regiment .. { Siege	2 2	0 5	1 9

DAILY PAY and Deductions of Sub-officers and Soldiers—*cont.*

Ranks.		Total pay.	Division.	
			Deduct for clothing fund.	Pay proper.
ARTILLERY—continued.		s. d.	s. d.	s. d.
Squadron Ser- jeant-Major .	Company of artisans	2 7	0 5	2 3
	" { Horse battery	2 4½	0 5	1 11½
	" { Mounted battery			
	" { Reserve	2 3½	0 5	1 10½
	Pontoon company			
	Siege Regi- ments . .	Siege battery	2 1	0 5	1 8
" { Reserve battery				
Squadron Serjeant-Major, Constructor	Depôt	2 3½	0 5	1 10½
	Company of { Armourers			
company . .	Artificers	2 0½	0 5	1 7½
Company of artisans		2 0½	0 5	1 7½
Field Regiments	Horse battery	1 10	0 5	1 5
	Mounted battery			
	Reserve			
Pontoon company		1 10	0 5	1 5
Siege Regiment	Siege battery	1 8	0 5	1 3
	Reserve battery			
	Depôt			
Company of . .	Armourers	1 5½	0 5	1 0½
	Artificers			
Trumpet Corporal		0 8½	0 3½	0 5
Master tailor, master bootmaker, master saddler .		0 9½	0 3½	0 6
Saddler (soldier)	{ 2nd and 4th Regiments	0 8½	0 3½	0 5½
	{ 1st and 3rd			
Mounted Cor- poral . .	Field Regi- ments . .	0 10½	0 4	0 6½
	" { Horse battery			
	" { Mounted battery			
Dismounted Corporal . .	Reserve	0 11½	0 4	0 7½
	" { Pontoon company			
	Artisan	0 10½	0 3½	0 7½
	Field Regi- ments . .			
	" { Mounted battery	0 9½	0 3½	0 6½
	" { Reserve			
" { Siege				
Corporal Arti- ficer . .	Siege Regi- ments . .	0 8½	0 3½	0 5½
	" { Reserve			
	" { Siege			
Trumpeter . .	Depôt	1 3½	0 5	0 10½
	Field Regi- ments . .			
	" { Horse	1 2½	0 5	0 9½
	" { Mounted			
	" { Reserve			
	Trumpeter . .	Siege Regi- ments . .	1 2½	0 5	0 9½
" { Siege				
" { Depôt				
Pontoon company		1 2½	0 5	0 9½
Artisan		1 2½	0 5	0 9½
Armourers'		1 2½	0 5	0 9½
Artificers'		1 2½	0 5	0 9½

DAILY PAY and Deductions of Sub-officers and Soldiers—*cont.*

Ranks.				Total pay.	Division.		
					Deduct for clothing fund.	Pay proper.	
ARTILLERY—continued.				s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	
Acting Trum- peter	{	Siege Regi- ment ..	Reserve battery ..	0 6½	0 3½	0 3½	
Saddler ..		Field Regi- ments ..	Horse Mounted " "	0 9½	0 3½	0 6	
Blacksmith ..		{	Siege Regi- ments ..	Siege " "	0 8½	0 3½	0 5½
Wheeler ..			Reserve " "				
Carpenter ..	{	Field Regi- ments ..	Horse Mounted " "	0 8½	0 3½	0 4½	
Farrier ..	{	Reserve " "					
Master Artisan	pontoon company			0 10½	0 4	0 6½	
	Artisan company			0 9½	0 3½	0 6½	
	Pontoon			0 8½	0 4	0 4½	
Soldiers, Class	1st	Field Regi- ments ..	Horse battery ..				
		{	Mounted battery				
			Siege Regi- ment ..	Siege " "	0 7½	0 3½	0 4½
			Company of	Armourers Artificers ..			
		Artisan company	0 7½	0 3½	0 4½		
		Pontoon	0 7½	0 3½	0 4		
		Field Regi- ments ..	Horse battery ..	0 8½	0 3½	0 4½	
Soldier, Class	2nd	{	Mounted battery				
			Siege Regi- ments ..	Siege " "	0 6½	0 3½	0 3½
		{	Armourers Artificers ..				
			Company of				
Driver..		Mounted batteries	1st Class .. 2nd ..	0 8½ 0 8½	0 3½ 0 3½	0 5 0 4½	
IV. BATTALION OF THE TRAIN.							
"Adjutant" sub-officer	..	..	..	2 8½	0 7½	2 1
Orderly Room Serjeant	..	..	..	1 10	0 5	1 5
Magazine Serjeant ..	..	..	..	1 8	0 5	1 3
Squadron Serjeant-Major	..	..	..	2 4½	0 5	1 11½
Serjeant and Quartermaster-Serjeant	..	..	..	1 10	0 5	1 5
Trumpet Corporal ..	..	..	..	1 5½	0 5	1 0½
Master tailor, master bootmaker, and master saddler ..	..	..	..	0 8½	0 3½	0 5
Corporal ..	..	..	..	0 10½	0 4	0 6½
Trumpeter ..	..	..	..	1 3½	0 5	0 10½
Farrier ..	..	..	..	0 8½	0 3½	0 4½
Saddler, blacksmith, and carpenter	..	..	..	0 8½	0 3½	0 5½
Driver..	{	1st Class ..	..	0 8½	0 3½	0 5
		2nd Class ..	..	0 8½	0 3½	0 4½
V. ENGINEERS.							
"Adjutant" sub-officer	..	..	..	2 8½	0 7½	2 1
Orderly Room Serjeant	..	..	..	2 1	0 5	1 8
Magazine Serjeant..	..	..	..	1 9½	0 4½	1 4½
Bugle Serjeant ..	..	..	..	2 0½	0 6½	1 6½
Armourer Serjeant ..	..	..	..	1 9½	0 5	1 4½

INFANTRY.						£	s.	d.
Commandant ..	Regiment of Carabiniers ..	..	..	..	..	28	0	0
	Other regiments ..	..	..	..	..	25	12	0
	Of dépôt ..	..	..	..	..	17	4	0
	Battalion ..	..	..	..	..	5	4	0
Captain Quartermaster	Carabiniers ..	..	..	..	..	120	0	0
	"Chasseurs-à-Pied," Infantry of the Line and Grenadiers ..	..	..	..	..	108	0	0
	Each sedentary company, and for school for soldiers' children ..	..	..	..	..	3	0	0
	With an active battalion ..	..	..	..	..	16	0	0
Detached Pay-Officer ..	" two ..	..	..	..	..	24	0	0
	" three ..	..	..	..	..	32	0	0
	" four ..	..	..	..	..	40	0	0
	" one non-active battalion ..	..	..	..	..	10	0	0
Clothing Officer	Carabiniers,—with two non-active battalions ..	..	..	..	..	16	0	0
	Carabiniers ..	..	..	..	..	21	4	0
	Other regiments ..	..	..	..	..	17	4	0

The clothing officer receives, in addition to keeping up the stores and clothing left by furlough men, an allowance of £12 per annum out of the clothing fund.

						Per annum.		
						£	s.	d.
Arms Officer..	..	..	..	..	..	5	12	0
Officer in charge of band ..	..	..	..	..	..	1	9	0
						(Paid out of Band Fund).		
"Adjutant" Sub-officer ..	..	..	..	..	..	2	0	0
Officer com- manding companies ..	Depôt ..	..	..	..	..	9	12	0
	Active battalion ..	..	..	..	..	8	0	0
	Non-active ..	..	..	..	..	5	12	0
	School ..	..	..	..	..	5	12	0

CAVALRY.

Commandant of Regiment ..	..	..	..	..	..	21	4	0
" depôt ..	..	..	..	..	..	15	4	0
" division ..	..	..	..	..	..	5	4	0
" riding school ..	..	..	..	..	..	4	15	0
Captain Quartermaster ..	..	..	..	..	..	72	0	0
Detached Pay { 2 and 3 squadrons ..	..	..	..	..	..	16	0	0
Officer .. { 4 and 5 ..	..	..	..	..	..	20	16	0
Clothing Officer ..	..	..	..	..	..	9	4	0
Arms Officer ..	..	..	..	..	..	4	0	0
Officer in charge of band ..	..	..	..	..	..	1	9	0
						(Out of Band Fund).		
"Adjutant" { Regiments ..	..	..	..	..	..	2	0	0
Sub-officer .. { Riding school ..	..	..	..	..	..	4	0	0
Squadron Commandant ..	..	..	..	..	..	9	12	0

ARTILLERY.

Commandant of Regiment ..	..	..	..	..	..	24	0	0
" depôt ..	..	..	..	..	..	15	4	0
" division ..	..	..	..	..	..	5	4	0
Captain Quartermaster { Fixed allowance ..	..	..	..	..	..	96	0	0
For each company, Pontoniers, Artisans, Armourers, and Artificers ..	..	..	..	..	..	3	0	0

Detached Pay { 2, 3, 4, 5, and 6 batteries ..	..	..	..	..	..	16	0	0
Officer .. { 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, and 12 batteries ..	..	..	..	..	..	24	0	0
.. { More than 12 batteries ..	..	..	..	..	..	28	0	0

ARTILLERY.—*continued.*

		£	s.	d.
Clothing Officer	Fixed allowance	14	0	0
	For each company, Pontoniers, Artisans, Armourers, and Artificers	1	4	0
Arms Officer		2	15	0
"Adjutant" Sub-officer		2	0	0
Commandant of Battery ..	Horse battery	9	12	0
	Field Regiments { Field	8	0	0
	Reserve	4	12	0
	Siege Regiments { Siege	5	12	0
	Reserve	4	0	0
	Depôt	8	0	0

SPECIAL COMPANIES.

Commandant of company ..	Pontoniers	8	0	0
	Artillery artisans	5	12	0
	Armourers	5	12	0
	Artificers	5	12	0

BATTALION OF THE TRAIN.

Commandant of corps	20	0	0
Captain Quartermaster	60	0	0
Clothing Officer	9	4	0
Arms Officer	2	0	0
"Adjutant" Sub-officer	1	9	0
Company commandant	8	0	0

ENGINEERS.

Commandant of Regiment	25	12	0
„ depôt	17	4	0
„ battalion	5	4	0
Captain { Fixed allowance	80	0	0
Quartermaster { For each special company	3	0	0
Clothing Officer { Fixed allowance	12	0	0
For each special company	1	12	0
Arms Officer	4	0	0
"Adjutant" Sub-officer	2	0	0
Commandant Sappers and Miners	5	12	0
„ depôt company	9	12	0
„ special company	7	4	0

ADMINISTRATION BATTALION.

Field (<i>supérieur</i>) Officer of administration	20	0	0
Officer performing Quartermaster's duties	60	0	0
„ Clothing Officer's duties	9	4	0
Officer in charge of company	8	0	0
„ command of detachment	2	0	0

GENDARMERIE.

Commandant of corps	..	..	..	..	..	64	0	0
Major	..	..	..	..	..	17	4	0
Captain Quartermaster	..	..	..	..	..	67	12	0
Clothing Officer	..	..	..	..	..	10	8	0
Commandant	{	of company	..	..	..	28	15	0
		of arrondissement	..	..	..	4	0	0

STATE of Military School for Scholastic Year 1878*-79.—No. 2.

Section.	Year of study.	Date of commencement of the course.	Students remaining to continue the course.				Competition for examination.				Number of students.							Final examinations.			Students entering the army as Sub-lieutenants.				Date of termination of course.	Average age at entrance.	State on 31st December, 1878.	Observations.																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																									
			From other course.	From other batches.	From special arms.	Examinated.		Entered.	Number of candidates.		Number of examination.	Number of students.							Number of students	Examined.	Passed.	Not passed.	Infantry.	Cavalry.					Artillery.	Engineers.	Remaining for succeeding course.																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																						
						From other course.	From other batches.		From special arms.	Army.		Civilian.	Army.	Civilian.	Examined.	Entered.	Number of candidates.	Number of examination.														Passed to lower batch.	Passed to infantry section.	Died.	Retired.	As sub-officers or soldiers.	To their parents.	Sent away																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																															
																																							From other course.	From other batches.	From special arms.	Army.	Civilian.	Army.	Civilian.	Examined.	Entered.	Number of candidates.	Number of examination.	Passed to lower batch.	Passed to infantry section.	Died.	Retired.	As sub-officers or soldiers.	To their parents.	Sent away																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																																													
Special arms (application)* ...	4th	15/1/79	43

* Students of the school of application have the rank of sub-lieutenant.

GENERAL State of School for Volunteers of Infantry, from 1876-79.—No. 3.

Years:	Strength		Changes during the year.				Remaining for Examination.		Result of Examinations at the end of the year.						Students passed to the army as			Strength		Average age		
	On 1st January.	At beginning of the course.	Admitted.	Left.			Died.	To the army.	Home.	1st year's study.		2nd year's study.		3rd year's study.		Recommended as corporals.	Corporals.	Soldiers.	On conclusion of course.	On 31st December.	At entrance.	At conclusion of training.
				Passed.	Not passed.	Passed.				Not passed.	Passed.	Not passed.										
1876-1877...	..	..	184	1	..	1	182	46	..	..	6	129	..	..	5	..	..	..	182	81	17 years.	..
1877-1878...	81	182	84	1	..	7	258	79	6	..	..	..	..	39	5	39	1	..	218	201	"	..
1878-1879...	202	218	102	1	..	13	306	65	5	104	3	113	16	104	19	104	19	5	178	266	"	..

STATE of the School for Soldiers' Children during the Scholastic Years 1876-79.—No. 4.

Years.	Strength		Changes during the year.		Result of the Examinations at the end of the year.										Passed to the army as			Strength		Average age				
	On 1st January.	At beginning of course.	Admitted.	Died.	Left.		Remaining for Examination.										Recommended for grade of corporal.	Corporals.	Soldiers.	At end of course.	On 31st December.	At entrance.	At conclusion of training.	
					Sent away	To the army.	Prepara- tory course.	1st year's study.		2nd year's study.		3rd year's study.		4th year's study.										
1876—1877..	272	212	62	1	8	..	265	32	6	63	17	62	12	36	10	27	..	5	25	21	214	273	{ 12 years 4 months 8 days	{ 16 years. 6 months. 15 days.
1877—1878..	273	208	93	..	1	..	301	13	..	90	7	86	3	75	3	24	..	7	16	19	258	301	{ 12 years 5 months 15 days	{ 16 years. 7 months. 6 days.
1878—1879..	301	258	69	1	4	1	321	8	3	81	6	112	4	73	3	31	..	10	28	22	261	321	{ 11 years 10 months 27 days	{ 16 years. 7 months. 6 days.

APPENDIX IV.

COMMERCIAL IMPORTANCE OF ANTWERP.

Parliamentary Papers. Commercial, No. 44 (1880).

WORKS IN COURSE OF CONSTRUCTION FOR THE ENLARGEMENT OF THE PORT OF ANTWERP.

A SERIES of new quays and docks are in construction. The works are being rapidly carried forward, and to all appearance are being well executed, and every effort is being made by the town and the Belgian Government to secure and maintain for Antwerp the position of the most important port on the Continent of Europe. The principal maritime works are the alteration of the quays on the right bank of the Scheldt, extending almost the whole length of the river frontage of Antwerp from its southernmost point—the site of the old Spanish citadel. The intention is to afford increased depth of water in the proximity of the quays,* so as to supply additional facilities for loading and unloading of vessels alongside, and at the landing stages, thus made accessible to the larger class of steamers. The whole of these works were visited, including the caissons sunk in mid-stream, the operations in connection with which are carried on after dark by means of electric light. With regard to the alteration of the quays, it may be mentioned that they will be considerably widened by the expropriation and demolition of most of the buildings which at present face the river, giving a general width of quay of about 60 mètres (195 feet). A basin for the use of vessels navigating inland waters, forms part of the projected works. The enterprise was undertaken in 1877 by Messrs. Hersent and Courreux, of Paris, who contracted with the Belgian Government to execute these works for the sum of 38,275,325 francs (£1,531,015). They were to be completed in six years and seven months from the date of contract, and it is expected that they will be terminated early in the year 1884. The stipulated price will, however, in all probability be exceeded. The total expense of the works will, it is now estimated, reach about 40,000,000 francs (£1,600,000), and the expropriations about 18,000,000 (£720,000). Much activity has also been shown in regard to improvements connected with the docks. The Kattendyk dock is being lengthened to the extent of 400 mètres (about 1,300 feet), and three new dry docks are in process of construction. The present docks altogether cover a surface of 40½ hectares (about 100 acres). The quays embrace an extent of 4,000 mètres (13,000 feet), besides 2,500 mètres of slopes (8,100 feet), the masonry of which is not completed. The works last-mentioned, namely, the lengthening of the Kattendyk dock and the building of the three dry docks were commenced in September, 1877, and are now almost finished. Their cost will amount to about 10,360,000 francs (£414,400), of which 7,000,000 francs (£280,000) have been spent for expropriation, 3,160,000 francs (£126,400) for

* Vessels drawing seven mètres (23 feet) come into dock at Antwerp.

the actual cost of construction, and 200,000 francs (£8,000) for incidental expenses. These funds have been entirely provided by the town of Antwerp by means of a loan. The growing importance of the town and port of Antwerp may be shown first, by the increase of the wealth and population. The town (including the suburbs of Berchem and Borgerhout, both *intra muros*) now numbers 200,000 inhabitants, whereas in 1839 the population was 65,000. Secondly, by the extensive and costly public works, and general improvements executed of late years. Thirdly, by the almost unparalleled progress of navigation, as will be seen by the following condensed statement:—

The tonnage of vessels entered was 500,000 tons in 1860; 1,000,000 tons in 1867; 1,500,000 tons in 1870; 2,000,000 tons in 1873; 2,500,000 tons in 1876, and close upon 3,000,000 tons in 1879, about 60 per cent. of which was English. The shipping of the port has thus doubled during the last ten years, and has increased sixfold within the last twenty years.

I N D E X

TO

ARMED STRENGTH OF BELGIUM.

INDEX.

A.

	PAGE
Active army (combatants)	39
" (non-combatants)	56
Administration Battalion	58
" (War Ministry)	14
Administrative Districts	73
Albini Rifle	114—119
Allowances for harness, shoeing, &c.	110
" in lieu of Field rations	98, 103
" lodging	102
" office	187—189
" outfit	108
" outfit to Gendarmerie	110
" Regimental, for administration.. .. .	110
" to Sub-officers on promotion	110
" to troops in camp	103
Ammunition columns.. .. .	51
" S.A., improvements in.. .. .	116
Annual contingents	27—29
Antwerp, defences of	91—97
" port of	App. IV, p. 194
" Pyrotechnical school at	142
" school of Fieldworks	144
" strategical importance of	86—89
Appeals against incorporation in the "milice"	22
Appointment of officers	147
" to Staff, &c.	41, 129
Area and population	9
Army of Observation, 1870	54
" Arrondissements Administratifs"	12
Arsenal at Antwerp	16
Artificers, Company of	50, 171
Artillery	40, 44, App. I.
" ammunition columns	47, 51
" armament of	46—49
" and Engineer Districts	73
" establishments (Peace)	App. I, p. 171, 172
" school and practice ground	141
Artisans for Engineers, selection of	37
Auditors, military	155

B:

Bakeries	60
Barracks	122
Bayonet	114
Bedding	122
Belgian cartridge	116
Beverloo, School of Musketry at	137

	PAGE
Billeting	104
Boundaries	7
Bounty volunteers	18, 29—33
Budget, War Minister's, 1881	98

C.

Canals	8
Carbine (Carabinieri).. .. .	114, 117
„ (Cavalry)	114, 119
Cartridge for Barrack Room	117
„ improvements in	116
„ regulation	115
Cavalry.. .. .	39, 44, App. I.
Character of men in the ranks	38
Civic Guard	65
„ (precedence of)	152
Clothing	107
Coal	10
Columns, length of, &c.	121
Comblain (Rifle Carbine)	115, 118, 119
Command	145
“ Commandants de Place ”	72
Commanding officers (powers of)	156
Communications (rivers, canals, railways)	7, 8
“ Compagnie des lits militaires ”	123
Companies, cadre and strength	43 44, 49, 55, App. I, p. 168
Composition of Army of Antwerp	83, 85
„ „ Field Army	71, 82, 83, 85
„ „ Courts-martial (“ conseils de guerre ”)	155
„ „ the Military Court (“ cour militaire ”)	153, 154
Conscription	19
“ Conseils de discipline ”	156
Constitution of Country	11—14
„ „ Army.. .. .	41
Contingents, distribution of	25, 36
„ losses of	25—29
„ strength of	17, 27, 29, 30, 38, 84, 86
Cooking Pots	111
Correctional companies	160
Council of Military Education	16, 123
Course, Staff Officers	129
Courts-martial (“ conseils de guerre ”)	152
Crime in the Belgian Army	38

D.

Daily pay, Sub-officers and soldiers	106, App. II, p. 183
Decoration, military	151
Deductions of pay	101, 159
Defence of Belgium, scheme for	86—97
Detachments, &c., allowances to	102
Diest, Fortress of	49, 75, 89, 96, 97
Directions of Artillery and Engineers	73
„ „ Fortresses	74
„ „ War Ministry	14
Disciplinary or Correctional Company	160
„ „ measures	157
Discipline and Punishments	155
Dispensary, Central, at Antwerp	62
Distribution of Army (Peace)	75, 76
Distribution of recruits	19, 86, 87, 78
Drill instruction	119—122

E.		PAGE
"Enfants de Troupe," school for	.. .. .	136
Engineers	.. .. .	41, 55, App. I.
Engineer Districts	.. .. .	73
Entrance to Staff Corps, rules for	.. .. .	42, 125
Equipment, Infantry	.. .. .	107
" Table of	.. .. .	109
Establishments of Artillery (Peace)	.. .. .	App. I, p. 171, 172
" Cavalry	.. .. .	App. I, p. 170
" Engineers	.. .. .	App. I, p. 175
" Infantry	.. .. .	App. I, p. 163
" Special Companies and Train	.. .. .	App. I, p. 174
" War Ministry	.. .. .	14
Examinations at War School	.. .. .	125-129
" for Military School	.. .. .	132
Exemptions from Service	.. .. .	20, 21

F.		
Field allowances	.. .. .	103, 112
" camp equipment	.. .. .	111-112
" equipment	.. .. .	112
" guns, table of comparison	.. .. .	48
" Parks	.. .. .	53
" Rations	.. .. .	112
" Service	.. .. .	112
Firearms in Belgian Army (Table)	.. .. .	114-119
Forage	.. .. .	60, 101
Foreign military statistics (War Ministry)	.. .. .	15, 165
Fortresses	.. .. .	74, 87-97
Frontiers	.. .. .	7
Fund for widows and orphans	.. .. .	16, 151
Furloughs	.. .. .	24

G.		
"Garde Civique"	.. .. .	65
Garrison of Antwerp	.. .. .	83, 85
G. C. Badges	.. .. .	107
Gendarmerie	.. .. .	64
General Staff	.. .. .	41, 43
Geodesical Section (Cartographical Institute)	.. .. .	165
Government	.. .. .	12
Guards of Honour	.. .. .	152
Gunnery School	.. .. .	141

H.		
Height Standard for different corps	.. .. .	37
History of the Kingdom of Belgium	.. .. .	11
Hospitals	.. .. .	61, 62
Hospital transport	.. .. .	62-63
Huts at Beverloo	.. .. .	122
Huy, Fortress of	.. .. .	97

I.		
Improvement in S. A. cartridge	.. .. .	116
Incorporation of "Milice"	.. .. .	23

	PAGE
Infantry	36, 39, 43, App. I.
„ ammunition	51, 116, 118
„ „ column.. .. .	51
Inspection of armament	112
Instruction drill	119—123
„ at Musketry School (Beverloo).. .. .	120, 137—140
„ „ Pyrotechnical School	142
„ „ Riding School at (Ypres)	142
„ in Regimental Schools	140
Interior economy, &c... .. .	119—123
Intendance and Administration Battalion	56
Intendance	57, 73
Introduction	7

K.

King, powers of	14
-------------------------	----

L.

Languages	9
Length of Service	19
Levies of "Milice" (retrospect)	27—30
Liability to Military Service	18
Library (War Ministry)	15
Liège, defences of	89, 97
„ importance of	89
Lierre, position of	90, 91
Loss of rank (officers)	146
„ „ (sub-officers)	153
Losses of Contingents before and after incorporation	25

M.

Malines, position of	90, 91
Manceuvres	120
Marriage of soldiers	36
„ officers	143
Matériel of Artillery (War Ministry)	15
„ Engineers.. .. .	15
Medical Regulations	62
„ Service	61—64
Messes	97, 98
Meuse River, line of	89
"Miliciens" (conscripts)	18, 20—30
Military Cartographical Institute	165
„ Courts, composition of	152, 155
„ „ The (<i>cour militaire</i>)	153, 154
„ Education	123—144
„ Expenditure.. .. .	95—106
„ Justice and Discipline	157, 158
„ Laws and Decrees	17
„ Operations (War Ministry)	15
„ School	16, 131
Ministry of War	14—17
Mobilisation	77—86
Money, Weights, and Measures	11
Movement of troops (War Ministry)	15
Musketry	162
„ School (Beverloo)	137

	PAGE
Recruitment	18
" of "Miliciens"	20
" Bounty Volunteers	31
" Substitutes ("Remplaçants")	33
" Volunteers Pure	34
" War Ministry	14
Reduction of Sub-officers and Corporals	158
Re-engagements	82, 85, 108
Regimental allowance for administration and instruction	110
" Schools	140
Regulations for Staff Officers' course	126
Religion	10
Remounts	162
"Remplaçants"	19, 33, 34
Reserve rations	60, 113
" (recruiting)	17
Retirement of Officers	147
Requisitions	82, 104, 105
Revenue and Expenditure	8
Riding School (Ypres)	142
Rifle (Albini)	114—118
" (Comblain)	115, 118, 119
" (Terssen)	115, 118, 119
Rivers	7
Rounds per gun (field)	46, 49
" man	51
Rupel River, line of	90

S.

Scheldt, defences of River	93, 96
Scheme for defence of Belgium	86—97
Scholarships at Military school	133
School of Gunnery	141
" Military	131
" Musketry	137
" Pyrotechnical	142
" Regimental	140
" Riding (Ypres)	142
" War	124
" for soldiers' children ("enfants de troupe")	136
" for Volunteers of Infantry	133
Seaports	7
Secretariat (War Ministry)	15
Sedentary Companies	151, 168
Selection of men for different arms	86
Slaughter-houses	60
Small arm ammunition columns	51
" arms and ammunition	113—119
" " weights, and dimensions	118
Stable fund	110
Staff	41, 43
" Corps	41
" Appointment to	129
Standard of height	37
Statistics civil	8—11
" of foreign armies (War Ministry)	15, 165
Status of officers	146
Strategical importance of Antwerp	83
Strength of the Army (Peace and War)	17
" Regiments, Battalions, and Companies	App. I, pp. 168—176
" War	17, 82—86
Sub-officers	148
" allowances and pensions	102, 158
" and soldiers (War Ministry)	16

	PAGE
Sub-officers, reduction of	148, 149
„ Pension	150
„ Promotion	110, 145
Substitution and exchange ("miliciens")	22
Substitutes or "remplaçants"	19, 33, 34
Supply	59

T.

Telegraph Companies	56
Termonde, importance of	89
Territorial Districts, table of	74
Terssen (Rifle Carbine)	115, 120
Time-tables (railway) for mobilisation	81
Topographical Section (Cartographical Institute)	165
Trade of Belgium	10
Train, special companies of the	50, App. I, p. 174
Transport, Hospital	62, 63
Transport of ammunition	63

V.

Veterinary service	61
Volunteers	34, 35
„ conditions for	34

W.

Wall-piece	117
War Strength	17, 82—86
„ Minister's Budget, 1881	98
„ Ministry, 1st Direction	14—17
„ School	124
Weights and dimensions of small arms	114—119
Widow and orphan fund	16, 151

Y.

Ypres, Riding School at	142
---------------------------------	-----

WORKS

PREPARED IN THE

Intelligence Branch of the Quartermaster-General's Department, Horse Guards.

ARMED STRENGTH OF AUSTRIA. By Captain W. S. COOKE, 22nd Regt. Royal Svo. Part I.—180 pp., paper covers. Price 10s. 6d.

— Part II.—261 pp., paper covers. Price 11s. 6d.

ARMED STRENGTH OF DENMARK. By Captain W. S. COOKE, 22nd Regt. Price 3s.

ARMED STRENGTH OF FRANCE. By Major C. J. East, 57th Regt., D.A.Q.M.G. 1877. Price 7s. 6d.

ARMED STRENGTH OF THE GERMAN EMPIRE. Part I.—Organization and Administration. With Map. By Captain F. C. H. CLARKE, R.A., D.A.Q.M.G. 1876. Price 8s. 6d.

ARMED STRENGTH OF ITALY. Translated from the German by Lieut. W. A. H. HARE, R.E. 1875. Price 5s. 6d.

ARMED STRENGTH OF THE NETHERLANDS. By Captain F. C. H. CLARKE, R.A., D.A.Q.M.G. With Map. Price 4s.

ARMED STRENGTH OF RUSSIA. Translated from the German. 1873. Price 7s.

ARMED STRENGTH OF SWEDEN AND NORWAY. By Captain W. S. COOKE, 22nd Regt., D.A.Q.M.G. With Map. Price 3s. 6d.

ARMED STRENGTH OF SWITZERLAND. By Major FRANK S. RUSSELL, 14th Huss. 1880. Price 1s. 6d.

ATTACK FORMATION FOR INFANTRY IN THE AUSTRIAN, FRENCH, GERMAN, AND ITALIAN ARMIES: Outline of. 1881. Price 1s.

CAVALRY. Instructions for the Training, Employment, and Leading of. By Major-General CARL VON SCHMIDT. Compiled by Captain VON VOLLARD-BORNELBERG, 2nd Silesian Dragoons. Translated by Captain C. W. BOWDLER BELL, 8th Hussars. 1881. Price 3s. 6d.

CYPRUS. Compiled by Captain A. R. Saville, 18th Foot, 1878. Price 2s. 6d.

DENKIL-TAPE, Siege and Assault of. General Skobelev's Report. Translated by Lieut. J. J. LEVERSON, R.E. 1881. Price 3s.

FRANCE. Military Reports, Addressed to the French War Minister by Colonel MARON STOFFET, French Military Attaché in Prussia, 1836-1870. Translated by Lieut.-Col. HOME, C.B., R.E. Royal Svo. Price 8s.

FRENCH ARMY: Reforms in. Part I.—The Law of Recruiting. Translated by Lieut.-Col. HOME, C.B., R.E. Royal Svo., 104 pp., stiff paper cover. Price 1s. 6d.

— Part II.—General Organization. Translated by Major C. B. BRACKENBURY, R.A. Price 2s.

FRENCH ARMY, Reorganization of. Speech of the Duke D'AUDIFFRET-PALQUET. Price 1s.

GERMANY: Campaign of 1836 in. Compiled by the Department of Military History of the Prussian Staff. Translated into English by Colonel VON WITTICH, Chief of the Staff VIIth Prussian Corps, and Captain HENRY J. HOZIER, Assistant Controller. Price 17. 1s., in 1 vol. Royal Svo., cloth boards, with a Portfolio of Plans.

STEPPE CAMPAIGNS: A Series of Lectures on Translated from the Russian. Price 2s.



